

2625. T. G. c. v. A.





V O Y A G E S
A N D
T R A V E L S

T H R O U G H

THE RUSSIAN EMPIRE, TARTARY, AND
PART OF THE KINGDOM OF PERSIA.

By JOHN COOK, M. D. AT HAMILTON

IN TWO VOLUMES.

THE SECOND EDITION.



VOL. I.

Si ad honestatem nati sumus, ea aut sola expetenda est, aut certe omni pondere gravior est habenda, quam reliqua omnia. TUL.

EDINBURGH:

PRINTED FOR THE AUTHOR, AND SOLD BY
E. & C. DILLY, LONDON.

M,DCC,LXXVIII.

VOLUME 2

THE RUSSIAN EMPIRE, TARTARY, AND
Part of the Kingdom of Persia.

THE SECOND

THE RUSSIAN EMPIRE, TARTARY, AND
Part of the Kingdom of Persia.

BY JOHN COOK, M.D. F.R.S.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

THE SECOND EDITION.

VOL. I.



Printed by J. G. ALLEN, 10, Abchurch Lane, London, E.C. 4.

Printed for the Author, by J. G. ALLEN, 10, Abchurch Lane, London, E.C. 4.

TO
THE MOST NOBLE
DOUGLAS,
DUKE OF HAMILTON,
CHATELERAULT AND BRANDON;
MARQUIS OF DOUGLAS
AND CLYDESDALE;
EARL OF ANGUS, ARRAN,
LANARK AND CAMBRIDGE;
LORD AVEN, ABERBROTHICK,
POLMONT, MACHANSHIRE,
AND INNERDALE;
BARON DUTTON;
HERETABLE KEEPER OF HIS MAJESTY'S PALACE OF
HOLY-ROOD-HOUSE, ETC. ETC. ETC.

MY LORD DUKE,

HAVING, by the appointment of your illustrious parents, had the honour to tend your Grace, the late Duke of Hamilton, and Lady Elisabeth, in the various diseases and disorders incident to infancy and childhood; and the happiness, by the divine blessing on a safe practice, and an incessant care to carry you through them, and preserve such precious lives, I, in respect of those perils, and their ever uncertain events, now feel much pleasure and satisfaction, where I formerly

formerly felt the most sensible pain and sollicitude.

YOUR Grace then, the second hope, is now, alas! (here soft pity steals a tear) the first; and, too soon, the Head of a most antient, and a most illustrious Family; but the bud is beautiful; for, in the dawn of youth, you bid fair for future eminence, and that you will in the day of manhood republish the virtues of your Great Ancestors.

YOUR Ancestors, an illustrious Race! were, my Lord Duke, great subjects, nearly related to Sovereignty, distinguished in their several successions for their wisdom and their valour, and by their firm and steady adherence to Liberty, to Loyalty, and Religion: And your Grace, animated by their great example, sweetly blended with the milder virtues of the most amiable Beauty and Perfection imaginable, “so perfect, and so peerless,” will, I know it, begin early to emulate their excellence, and, born a Prince, behave after a princely manner.

FOR it is not titles of honour, however many and splendid, nor dignity of station, however

however high and elevated ; nor wealth, however vast and various ; but true virtue, and inward worth, a soul supreme, superior to fortune, to passion and pride, that ennobled humanity, make a man great, good, and god-like, and mark him out as the object of the veneration of the present, and the admiration of all succeeding ages.

MEANWHILE, permitted by your Grace, a high and undeserved distinction, I most humbly, and with much diffidence, presume to lay the following Travels at your Grace's feet, and pour forth my fervent prayers, that you may be endowed with the choicest gifts ; that you may tread in the paths of wisdom and virtue, which alone lead to true glory and solid greatness ; and that you may live long, great and good, the pride of your country, as well as the prime of the Peerage, to adorn your high station, and adore the Glorious Author of it.

With the most profound, and the most respectful esteem, I have the honour to be,

May it please your Grace,

Your Grace's most humble, most obliged,
and most devoted Servant,

J O H N C O O K.

however high and elevated; nor wealthy,
however vast and various; but true virtue,
and inward worth, a soul improving, superior
to fortune, to passion and pride, that exalts
humanity, make a man great, good, and
god-like, and mark him out as the object of
the veneration of the people, and the admi-
ration of all succeeding ages.

MEANSWORTH, permitted by your Grace,
a high and undelivered distinction, I must
humbly, and with much diffidence, presume
to lay the following Tracts at your Grace's
feet, and pour forth my fervent prayers,
that you may be endowed with the choicest
gifts; that you may tread in the paths of
wisdom and virtue, which alone lead to true
glory and solid greatness; and that you may
live long, great and good, the pride of your
country, as well as the prince of the Peace,
to whom your high station, and above the
Ordinary, entitles you.

With the most profound, and the most
tender affection, I have the honour to be,
My humble servant,
Your Grace's most humble, most obliged,
and most devoted servant,

JOHN COOK.

T H E

C O N T E N T S.

Chap. I. <i>The author's departure, and what happened immediately before he left England</i>	Page 3
Chap. II. <i>Of Elfsineur and Cronstadt</i>	6
Chap. III. <i>The author sets out from Cronstadt, and arrives in St Petersburg</i>	13
Chap. IV. <i>Concerning St Petersburg</i>	14
Chap. V. <i>Concerning the policy of the medicine chancery and council</i>	25
Chap. VI. <i>Concerning the hospitals in St Petersburg</i>	30
Chap. VII. <i>Concerning military regulations</i>	38
Chap. VIII. <i>Differences of ranks in the fleet and army</i>	40
Chap. IX. <i>The different degrees of honour in the army</i>	41
Chap. X. <i>Regulations for widows and orphans in the Russian service and religion</i>	44
Chap. XI. <i>Concerning the Russian religion, their churches, &c.</i>	46
Chap. XII. <i>A description of the christening of the water</i>	50
Chap. XIII. <i>Of the different degrees and customs of the clergy</i>	51
a	Chap.

Chap. XIV. <i>Of the academy, admiralty, castle, and foundery</i>	55
Chap. XV. <i>Of the exchange and markets</i>	61
Chap. XVI. <i>A general description of the city, &c.</i>	62
Chap. XVII. <i>A continuation of the same, and of Peterhoff</i>	66
Chap. XVIII. <i>Of Ranyboam, Russian laws, nobility and gentry</i>	68
Chap. XIX. <i>Institutions of companies of merchants, &c.</i>	75
Chap. XX. <i>What happened at Peterhoff, and elsewhere</i>	78
Chap. XXI. <i>A continuation of what happened at Peterhoff</i>	81
Chap. XXII. <i>The author engageth in the Russian service</i>	84
Chap. XXIII. <i>The author employed in the general hospital</i>	86
Chap. XXIV. <i>The author receives orders to march. Great Conflagrations in St Petersburg, and the criminals punished</i>	94
Chap. XXV. <i>Anecdotes during the author's stay in St Petersburg. Coins, weights, and measures</i>	99
Chap. XXVI. <i>Concerning Russian measures of extension</i>	108
Chap. XXVII. <i>The author leaves St Petersburg. Account of the Eams</i>	109
Chap. XXVIII. <i>What happened to the author in his way to Moscow</i>	111
Chap.	

The CONTENTS.

v

Chap. XXIX. <i>A continuation of the former</i>	116
Chap. XXX. <i>A continuation of the same discourse</i>	119
Chap. XXXI. <i>A continuation of the same, and of our arrival in Moscow</i>	121
Chap. XXXII. <i>Short observations on Moscow, its bells, &c.</i>	123
Chap. XXXIII. <i>The author leaves Moscow</i>	125
Chap. XXXIV. <i>The author's journey from Tula to Taverhoff</i>	128
Chap. XXXV. <i>A continuation of the same, and some account of the Cossack government</i>	144
Chap. XXXVI. <i>A continuation of the same</i>	148
Chap. XXXVII. <i>Our return to Taverhoff by the river Don</i>	159
Chap. XXXVIII. <i>What happened after my arrival in Taverhoff, &c.</i>	173
Chap. XXXIX. <i>Concerning what happened to the author by Admiral Bredal, &c.</i>	182
Chap. XL. <i>A geographical description of the province of Veronits, its capital, and a natural history of this country</i>	190
Chap. XLI. <i>Concerning the Russian and Turkish war, from the year 1736, till the latter end of the year 1739</i>	196
Chap. XLII. <i>The operations of the armies in the year 1737</i>	199
Chap. XLIII. <i>The operations of the armies in the year 1738</i>	208
Chap. XLIV. <i>A continuation of the success of the Russian army</i>	217
Chap.	

Chap. XLV. <i>A continuation of the success of the Russian arms</i>	225
Chap. XLVI. <i>Concerning the success of the Russian arms in the year 1739</i>	228
Chap. XLVII. <i>A continuation of the success of the Russian arms under the orders of Count Muinich</i>	231
Chap. XLVIII. <i>A continuation of the success of the Russian arms under the command of Count Muinich</i>	238
Chap. XLIX. <i>Concerning the nature of the climate, and diseases properly endemical, with the author's opinion of the causes</i>	246
Chap. L. <i>Concerning various anecdotes during my two years peregrination in and about Taverhoff</i>	256
Chap. LI. <i>A continuation of what happened remarkable in Taverhoff, early in the summer 1748</i>	263
Chap. LII. <i>A continuation of the same subject</i>	269
Chap. LIII. <i>A description of the city and kingdom of Astrachan, &c.</i>	292
Chap. LIV. <i>Being an account of the Jaik river inhabitants, and a relation of what passed there, with some anecdotes which the author was informed of from creditable people, &c.</i>	296
Chap. LV. <i>What happened at our first coming to Astrachan</i>	302
Chap.	

Chap. LVI. Concerning the inhabitants, and other people living in, and immediately about Astrachan	306
Chap. LVII. Concerning the soil, animals, vegetables, and minerals about the city of Astrachan	314
Chap. LVIII. A continuation of the history of animals	321
Chap. LIX. Concerning the different methods the Astrachanians have to take fish, cure them, and their method of making caviar, called by the Russians <i>ikra</i>	329
Chap. LX. Concerning minerals found about Astrachan	337
Chap. LXI. A description of the river Volga	340
Chap. LXII. Of the garrison and government of Astrachan	345
Chap. LXIII. Concerning the commerce of Astrachan	348
Chap. LXIV. Concerning the occurrences which happened during the author's first abode in Astrachan	357
Chap. LXV. Concerning what happened in the year 1740 at Astrachan	359
Chap. LXVI. A continuation of what happened in the year 1740	366
Chap. LXVII. Continuation of what happened in the year 1740	370
Chap. LXVIII. The author treats of the different anecdotes, as they happened in the course of this year	375
Chap.	

- Chap. LXIX. *Concerning Monsieur Pierre Posset, and his adventures* 379
- Chap. LXX. *Concerning different affairs which happened this year* 387
- Chap. LXXI. *Concerning the death of the Empress Anna Ivanovna, &c.* 392
- Chap. LXXII. *An account of the fall of the Duke of Courland, regent of Russia, as the author was informed by creditable people, when he went to St Petersburg* 400
- Chap. LXXIII. *A continuation of what happened in the year 1740, at St Petersburg and Astrachan* 408
- Chap. LXXIV. *What happened in the year 1741* 416
- Chap. LXXV. *Concerning the author's journey to St Petersburg; what happened remarkable on the road, at St Petersburg, and till his return* 428
- Chap. LXXVI. *Concerning what happened in St Petersburg* 441
- Chap. LXXVII. *Declaration of war against Sweden* 453
- Chap. LXXVIII. *Concerning what happened to the author, and the cruel Crasna Schoke* 458

INTRODUCTION.

THE public must decide concerning the merit of the following travels: meanwhile their author, meaning well, and ambitious to please, if he should not improve his readers, hath strictly adhered to truth, and advanced nothing false.

Impartial in his narrative, he endeavours to render it agreeable and entertaining by giving a just and plain description of every distinguished place through which he passed, or where he resided; and fairly lays before the reader a general account of its laws and police, its religion, its manners and customs, with whatever is curious, uncommon, or remarkable concerning it.

Afraid of being deemed tedious, he omits the mention of many obvious things: nor does he, as is but too often the case with travellers, affect the new, but always aims at the true, despising the stilts of story, and regarding the standard of things, so that all his accounts of them are authentic, and none of them counterfeited.

Long absent from his native country, and, by his business, obliged to learn the language of others, he hath had little or no leisure to cultivate that of his own; hence the gentle reader will, he humbly hopes, generously forgive some few deviations from purity, propriety,

ty, or correctness of style which may be found in the following sheets.

Plainness and simplicity, and not pomp and elegance, have been his aim ; and if he hath succeeded in this respect, he fought no more.

The *egotism*, so frequent and familiar in these his travels, can scarce offend, as it is essential to them.

Finally, feeling the frailty of an author, a character to him entirely new, he, with much solicitude, but more submission, awaits the award of the public, in which, be it praise or censure, he shall most respectfully acquiesce.

VOY-

V O Y A G E S

A N D

T R A V E L S.

C H A P. I.

The Author's departure, and what happened immediately before he left England,

ON the first of May 1735, I was taken ill in Chelsea with a malignant fever, from which, by the great care of Dr Sharp, I was recovered; but it was succeeded by a slow remittent one, which daily seemed to increase, notwithstanding that worthy gentleman let me want for nothing which a skilful physician could administer; whereon he, having consulted the late Dr Mead concerning my case, was advised by him to send me down to Scotland to the place of my birth, not doubting but my native air, with the aid of proper medicines, would carry off the fever, and accomplish my recovery.

I carefully followed this advice, and lived about eight months in Scotland: but could scarcely observe any change for the better. Early in the year 1736, I resolved to go for Russia, hoping that the voyage, and change of

air, would do me some service, or at least that I could but die ; and that was then a matter of no consequence to me, whether it should happen abroad, or at home.

Accordingly, in June I took shipping for London, and on the fifth day of July fell down from Blackwall with the tide to Gravesend, in a ship commanded by Mr Thomas Belchier.

We arrived at Elsinour on the 10th, and at Cronstadt on the 29th of July. This passage was thought by many to be one of the quickest ever made from London.

But here the reader will halt a little, till I shall have told him of two trivial accidents which happened to me before I left this happy land of liberty and good sense.

The ship having fallen down from London to Blackwall, we dropped anchor for the night ; and the master went to London. My brother, the mate, two countrymen and I went on shore to spend the evening : We staid about two hours, and were going to bid farewell to our countrymen, when the mate told me, if I had any gold to change it, and pay our score ; for, said he, what I afterwards found to be false, “ British silver is of greater value than our gold in Russia.” I then bid the maid, (as our host and his wife were gone to the country on a visit) get me change for a guinea. The maid soon came back with the guinea, and said she could get no silver for it ; when, as I was just going to pay our reckoning,

a waterman entered the room, and told us that he would go and get it exchanged for silver. Upon enquiring, and the maid assuring us that he was honest, and well known to the whole family, I accordingly gave him the guinea, but never saw him more.

Determined however to have justice done me next morning, we staid in the house till nearly eleven o'clock at night, when we were of a sudden surpris'd with a female scream, which seem'd to indicate great distress. Ever ready to contribute what help I could to the afflicted, I ran to the room to the relief of the fair one, who, in an angry tone, told me, "that her house was of good repute, that no-
" thing of that kind had ever happened be-
" fore that time, that she was mistress of the
" house, and that the man in the room with
" her was her husband, and that they hop-
" ed to get us punished for defaming her
" house." My answer was, "Well, well,
" good woman, I have been cozened out of a
" guinea, and doubt not of getting satisfac-
" tion;" and so returned to my company.

Soon after this affair, a real or pretended watchman entered our room with his long pole, and ordered us to bed. We desired him to be gone, as we were honest people, and making no manner of disturbance. Our mild answer made the fellow more bold, upon which we turned him out, and remained quiet, till we were alarmed with the cry of the
ship's

ship's crew hoisting up the anchor, which obliged us to part with our honest hostess, and me to put up with the foolish loss of my guinea.

In our passage to Russia, I told our captain the whole transaction. He desired the narration under my hand; this I readily gave him, attested by my brother, and the mate. In the year 1741, I was informed by Captain Belchier, whom I met at that time in St Petersburg, that his crew at their return to London went to that house, got drunk upon the credit of the guinea, and at last presented to the people of the house my attested declaration, as payment of their reckoning. The landlord and his family threatened, the sailors ran mad, and broke every thing, not leaving a single glass window, nor any thing they could break, and so with great satisfaction retreated to London.

C H A P. II.

Of Elfsineur and Cronstadt.

AT Elfsineur I went ashore, till the ship-master dispatched some business, which was finished in less than two hours; I can therefore say little about the people, only that they seemed to be very poor, but happy under the government of their king. They were extremely affable to us. I made only one general

neral remark concerning that town, as I was in no other, namely, that their native animals were very small, except themselves and their mastiff dogs.

At Cronstadt the shipmaster told me that I should pay my compliments, without loss of time, to the commander Admiral Gordon, else it would be very ill taken: Accordingly I went with him to a large palace, where the Admiral lived. As I entered the door, a man, standing with proper instruments, stopped me, and pointed to my shoes, which were covered with dust. He immediately cleaned them with as great art as if he had been taught in London. I offered him money, but a gentleman, who was walking in the lobby, forbade me, and, in good English, asked me if I imagined their Admiral was not able to pay his servants for doing their duty. I excused myself to him, and observed, that as I imagined he was a Briton, he knew it was the custom in that country to give vails to gentlemens servants. He smiled, and told me that it was no custom in Russia, and that their masters took it as a very great affront; not only so, but that it made them useless; as they mis-spent their money, and neglected their duty. I could not deny the justice of his remark, and he immediately in the most obliging manner shewed me the room where the Admiral was. The Admiral asked me a great many pertinent questions, and, in short, received me
with

with that graceful ease which is natural to great minds. Amongst other things he asked me, Whether I had any acquaintances in Russia? and, Whether I was recommended to any persons who could be of service to me? My answer was, That I knew not a single person, nor did I ask for recommendations to any. He said that a knowledge of business was the best recommendation in that country, but at the same time an introduction to the principal overseers, made every thing more easy, and told me, that although Russia was but in its infancy in most branches of arts and learning, yet I would experience as smart an examination as in any country; but doubted not that I should meet with justice. He then spoke to a gentleman who was in company with him, in the German language, and, after that, desired me to wait upon that gentleman tomorrow, who would give me a letter to the Archiater, who was President of the Medicine Chancery, or College of Medicine, and that probably the Archiater would order me to be examined in a very few days; and, if I was found qualified, he made no doubt of my being put in business without loss of time. Next morning I got the letter from the gentleman, who was physician to the fleet at Cronstadt.

My short stay in Cronstadt, and my ignorance of fortification will not permit my giving an exact or satisfactory account of the place: Suffice it however to say, that it is, considering

sidering its infancy, a port of no small strength, great safety to shipping, and good policy. The port is a semicircle on the south side of the island, built from the bottom of the sea with stones, and topped above with a strong stage of timber, which supports a great number of the largest cannon. From the middle of the semicircle, exactly opposite the port or entry, is built a large tongue, so far into the harbour, as to leave only room for ships of the largest size to be warped in. The royal navy ly moored on the east side, and shipping from all trading countries ly on the west side of the tongue. Directly opposite the port of this fine harbour, at a little distance, is a small rock well fortified, and furnished with large cannon, called *Crown'slott*. No persons are allowed to have fire or candle aboard any ship in the harbour: A candle is allowed in great need; but the candlestick must be placed in a vessel with water. All gun-powder is taken from the ships before they enter the harbour, and securely put into the imperial magazines till the ships are warped out, and ready to sail. Cook-rooms are built at a distance from the ships next the city, in the harbour, so that the water surrounds them on all sides, where the seafaring people are allowed to dress their meat. Fronting this harbour is a range of fine palaces, built of brick, for the great sea-officers, and their different courts. Behind these buildings is the city, consisting of many wooden houses,

and one of the finest dry docks possibly in the world; behind all which to the north is a large line and ditch, reaching from east to west, on the rampart of which are many bastions with cannon. The whole island is naturally fortified on the east, north, and west, with shallow water and many rocks and stones; and the city is also well fortified by art. The royal navy here consists of about thirty ships of war; one of them, the Royal Ann, mounts 120 guns. The fortifications are defended by marines and sailors. When any ship is to be let into the port, a soldier is placed on board, to take care of smuggling, and that the orders of police be strictly complied with. Their authority, if they behave well, is not small. Every morning and evening a large boat, with an officer, full of soldiers, is rowed round the shipping, and at every ship the officer enquires, If all is well?

Two accidents happened whilst I was there, of which I must acquaint the reader. I bought an anchor of brandy at Elfineur: Before we dropped anchor at Cronstadt, I was informed that the custom-house officers would carefully visit every chest, and that my brandy would stand a bad chance, though it was in bottles. The mate desired me to leave my key with him, whilst I went with the Captain to wait on the Admiral. At my return I was informed, that so soon as eight or ten of these custom-house people saw the flasks, they seated themselves

selves round with a view to drink, saying, *Boch dal*, that is, "God hath sent," a very common expression among the Russians, when they accidentally meet with any good luck. The mate, who was present, told them that those bottles belonged to a doctor; that there was poison in some of them, but as the doctor was gone ashore, it was impossible for him to say which was good, or dangerous. Upon this they rose condoling their misfortunes.

The other is; A passenger, who had a few watches to dispose of, and a dozen of new hats. The sailors, who had given him a good lesson, smuggled the watches easily, but the hats cost more trouble, as each sailor could take only one at a time on his head. At last it was observed by one of the customhouse soldiers in a ship which lay along side of ours, that the sailors went ashore with new hats, but returned either with old ones, or none. This happened just as the whole cargo had been safely landed over night. Next day, in the afternoon, as the passenger was going ashore, the discovery was then made public; whereupon the soldier seized him, and wanted to take the watch from his pocket; for which, in place of delivering it, he gave the soldier a box on the ear; but the people on board instantly separated them, so that none of them were hurt. The soldier swore revenge, and the mate, a very ingenuous good lad, told me, that our young passenger was in no small danger of

being severely prosecuted; because, he said, which I afterwards found to be very true, that the greatest general durst not strike a soldier when upon duty; that ignorance of the language was the best, and indeed a good plea: “But,” says he, “if you’ll take my advice, “I hope to bring him off, at the going round “of the evening boat.” Accordingly the mate and I caused prepare a quart mug of punch, but so strong, that it was at least half spirits, with a large proportion of sugar; this, after having feigned to drink to each other, we left on the captain, and went into the cabin, pretending business. The soldier wanted to taste the liquor; he did so, found it palatable, tasted it again and again, and thus continued tipling till he had emptied the mug, foolishly believing it fair drink, and that we had forgot it. This was just what the mate expected; for when the round returned, our soldier was fast asleep, and so dead drunk, that, when roused, he could not articulate one sensible word. The mate told the officer, that he could not take upon him to answer for what might be done in the ship, as the soldier was a thief, and was drunk, sleeping on the deck, with liquor he had stolen whilst we were engaged in business below; that he believed he was drunk in the morning, having without the least reason abused one of the passengers, and wanted to rob him of his watch. The officer coming aboard, and finding the man quite

quite stupid, changed him immediately for another; and sorry was I next morning to see him severely whipped with rods. The soldier on board the other ship, I was told, was afraid to complain to his officer, as he had not done his duty, when he at first made the observation; for which neglect he would have been severely punished. But the other, that was punished, suffered for two crimes in one action; the first was, in taking what was not his own, and the next, in getting drunk, especially when upon his duty.

C H A P. III.

The author sets out from Cronstadt, and arrives in St Petersburg.

HAVING staid in Cronstadt three days, I went in a long boat to St Petersburg, which is about 20 miles distant from Cronstadt. We sailed up the end of the gulf of Finland, which, to the east of Cronstadt, may be about nine or ten miles broad: The country on both sides is a rising country, covered over, as we thought, with lofty trees, mostly firs, which forms an agreeable prospect from the water; but there is much cleared ground, tho' in our situation we could see but little of it. The wind blowing high, and easterly, accompanied with such thunder and rain as I never saw

saw before, and the storm encreasing to such a degree, that we were happy in getting our boat under the cover of trees, and moored on the west side of Vasilie island; where, all wet, we covered ourselves with the sails, and lay till the morning, near a haven called the *Galley port*, or *Galerna haven*.

On Sunday morning we sailed up the north branch of the Neva, having Vasilie Ostroff or island to the south, and the castle to the north side, both shores well covered with barks, and ships of a smaller size: We at last arrived in the city, and lodged at the only British public house in it, kept by one Frazer a Scotman.

C H A P. IV.

Concerning St Petersburg.

HERE I do not propose to describe this city, but only to take notice of the more remarkable places, of the royal palaces, different courts, curiosities, customs, and policy of the city; which, by the bye, is a pattern to all the rest of the cities in Russia. Tho' there are several different palaces in the city, I shall only mention three. The most ancient and most respected, is a small house, which was built by the founder of the city, and father of the grandeur of the Russian empire, Peter the Great. It is built of wood, consisting of

a small kitchen, a room to do business in and dine, and a small bed-chamber, little bigger than a large bedstead. It has a gallery round it covered, where that great emperor used to walk in rainy weather, or when the heat of the sun was intolerable.

The first boat built in Petersburg by him, is placed at the end of this palace; and both house and boat are covered over with a shade of timber, to preserve them from the injuries of the air. It stands on the north side of the river Neva, near the citadel. The next palace stands on the south side, is also built of wood, and is called the summer palace. This was also said to be built by the great Peter; but it differs much from the former, being a very great building, containing a good many spacious rich rooms, well supplied with the richest furniture, having the Neva on the north, and very spacious gardens to the south, in which are several pleasure-houses, pavilions, shell-works, water-works, fine statues, and a private play-house, with a beautiful lake, well stored with fish, which will swim to you upon tolling a bell on a stage, whence they get the gross of their food.

Before this palace there is a very small ship mounting six small cannon, said to have been built by a Russian peasant, and presented to the great Peter, who called it Dadushka or grandfather, and obliged every ship, which was
built

built at St Petersburg, to pay their respects to it.

About half a mile down the south side of the Neva, stands a noble pile of stone, a very large square, containing a great number of spacious rooms : This is called the winter palace. It is probably one of the finest buildings in Europe ; but the inside far outdoes the outside. Surely no palace has nobler furniture, made of the finest materials, and remarkable for the most exquisite workmanship. In this square are lodged, not only the royal family, its retinue and attendants, but also the guards on duty, which are said to be 500, and are changed every morning. About a quarter of a mile south from the Neva, is another beautiful wooden palace built upon a canal. I never was within it, but was told that it surpassed all the rest in gilding, rich finishing and furniture, as it was built by the late empress Elizabeth ; and it is probably very true, as she loved grandeur, and in her conceits never considered expence. There are two others of less note.

The supreme court, which absolutely rules the whole Russian empire, and all other inferior courts, is called the cabinet. In it the monarch presides ; and, with the advice of two or three principal officers of state, decides all secret, perplexed, troublesome, and weighty affairs ; nor do they give notice of any of their transactions to any other court, except they

they judge it necessary ; and this is always done by way of a royal command, against which there is no addressing, but by way of petition in the humblest manner, never finding nor even insinuating the smallest fault, but respectfully representing the real state of the case, and most humbly entreating re-consideration of the affair ; but this is never done till the monarch is verbally and cautiously informed of the matter, and the great ministers of state are gained over to assist heartily in a repeal ; for, should they act in a less cautious manner, it would surprise none, if all the members of the inferior court were punished with death, as even the high senate itself is not exempted.

The next two great courts are those of commerce and foreign affairs : Their names imply their natures. No court interferes with the business of another, except in some very particular cases.

The next court is the high senate ; it consists of many or few members, as the monarch commands ; 24 or 36 are commonly the number : They have a president ordained by the cabinet. In this court all inland affairs are debated and discussed ; but an appeal may be made to the cabinet : However, the appellant must be sure that justice is on his side ; for, should it prove otherways, no less than death is the punishment. This is the supreme court of justice and policy, to which all the courts of Russia, and all the provinces

in it, must resort and address for directions and relief. This court is constantly kept where the Empress resides ; that, in case of any difficulty, redress and directions may be had without loss of time.

The next two courts seem to be pretty equal in power and honour ; they are the war-office and admiralty : They decide all affairs relating to the army and fleet, under the direction only of the cabinet. If money is wanted they apply to the senate, if their demands are reasonable ; but if refused or delayed, they only may, without danger of punishment, apply to the cabinet. In all these courts, which consist of many members, the proposal is first debated, then the youngest members opinions are asked ; and when the majority agree to it, it then becomes a law ; but the minority have it in their power not to subscribe the resolution, without finding fault with it, should the resolution afterwards be disapproved by the cabinet ; those who did not subscribe it are never censured : Every member has a right to subscribe, and, if agreeable to his conscience, he ought to do it. Every dubious matter is represented to the cabinet for their approbation. If they act according to the regulations established by Peter the Great, they never can be found culpable, altho', for weighty reasons, the cabinet sometimes do at least modify, if not alter, those regulations.

The

The last court is the policy. In every province there is a general provincial policy, and every city has a private policy. The inferiors must report regularly to their superiors. But all the provinces in Russia must report to St Petersburg-policy, and obey their orders. The policy is of very great use, and a great protection of the innocent and industrious, as it, without loss of time, apprehends, and punisheth all such as are guilty of smaller crimes, takes up, examines, and punisheth all idle people, and vagrants, of whatsoever condition or rank. This way of expressing myself, by saying vagrants of whatsoever condition or rank, may appear strange to Britons; but it is, notwithstanding, extremely compatible with the constitutions of that absolute empire; for every nobleman and gentleman is obliged to serve the state, either in a civil or military capacity. Now there are some who abscond; and such I term vagrants: For when they are discovered, they will, though of the best family, be seized by the policy, and sent to the department to which they belong, to stand trial, and the consequences of it. It is to be observed here, that no court can try any person belonging to another department, except for capital crimes; and in the courts of war and admiralty, they are always tried by a court-marshal, of which I shall say something presently. No person whatsoever can travel from

from one city or province to another, without a passport from the department to which he properly belongs, specifying the number of his attendants. Any gentleman may grant a passport to any of his household, but it must have annexed to it the policy seal. Peter the Great was so very careful to prevent people travelling without proper passports, that he constantly used them himself, and had them regularly booked. Thus at this day even ambassadors, and field-marshal's at the head of their victorious armies, must have passports, and consequently all inferiors must submit to the same regulation. It would be thought a great mark of slavery to be constrained to have a passport from Edinburgh to London, and that this passport must be examined at every city through which the person passeth. I cannot deny that it is so; but still, in such an extensive country as Russia, I imagine it is very necessary, and for the good of the people. The design does not seem calculated only to keep people under great subjection, but to prevent idle people from going about to rob, plunder, or steal from their neighbours, and to protect the innocent, diligent, and useful subject, and also to bring a small revenue into the treasury. Suppose one with a regular passport, travelling from St Petersburg to Moscow, is robbed and murdered on the road, his friends are not long before they suspect it. They immediately apply to the policy. The policy give notice in
the

the news-paper, and without loss of time send off couriers to all towns through which he was designed to pass, and orders to inferior policies to report when that person passed through their districts; at last, *e. g.* they find that he passed through Novogorod, but after that never was seen on the whole road to Moscow. The governor of Novogorod issues out orders for his dragoons to pursue, and raise the whole country, to scour the deserts and woods. The country people at such a time never fail to seize all suspected persons, nor dare they harbour any who have no passport; unless they are resolved to suffer death. They also send off expresses to all the neighbouring provinces. Every person is strictly examined. Thus the reader will see it is next to impossible that rogues or robbers should escape, unless upon the borders. And although the robbers are soon seized, and punished with torture and a cruel death, the governor shall scarcely escape degradation; and though he should have the greatest interest, he will yet be sure to meet with a very severe reprimand, and threatened if he does not keep better order, and a more strict out-look for the future. He is also mulcted, to make good at least what value was lost, when the unhappy man was murdered. The governor must bear all this; but he also mulcts his inferiors. Thus you see how much it behoves every one to take great care of the traveller; for if he is taken ill of any natural disease,

disease, and death ensues, a strict inquisition is made about every circumstance of his disease, what attendants he had, and what was done for his relief, that it may give his friends satisfaction, and that they may recover what value he had, which his books or his attendants shall discover. The great use of the policy will appear from two remarkable instances which I shall here recite.

When the late great field-marshal Prince Michael Golitzin was a child, his mother (the old prince being dead) went out to the country, with her numerous family, to pass a month in the summer, for the benefit of the country air in the hot weather. She left Moscow late in the afternoon with a numerous retinue, which, according to her rank, were well provided with arms. They had not travelled fifteen miles till they were attacked by a very great band of robbers. There were several noblemen and gentlemen of the army with her, who encouraged the servants, and behaved themselves so gallantly, that they killed and wounded a good many of the robbers, not without loss on their own side: however, they could take no prisoners, and were even glad that it was no worse. At the beginning of the conflict, the waggon, in which were the young prince with some of his brothers and sisters, was in the rear. The waggoner, at the very beginning, turned the horses, and drove for Moscow with all speed, and lost no
time

time in acquainting the policy with what had happened, who, with all possible expedition, sent off a numerous party to pursue and apprehend the robbers, who had built a cave in the middle of a thicket of thorns in a wood, and had so well taken care of tracks, that the party, though they soon met with their horses, were some time before they found out themselves. However, they were at last discovered, apprehended, and carried to Moscow, where they were tried, convicted, and condemned to a most cruel and ignominious death, which they deservedly suffered.

The next instance was that of a robbery, as I had it from a noble lady of great honour. A relation of her's, an old maiden lady, but very rich, kept a girl as waiting woman, for whom she had a great regard. A young fellow came frequently about the house to sell ribbands, beads, and other trinkets. During two or three months, he became perfectly acquainted with all the principal servants, and having got a thorough knowledge of the house, he made his addresses to the lady's waiting-woman, gave her many pretty presents, told her that he was the son of a rich merchant in Siberia, but had spent a sum of money since his arrival in Moscow, and therefore intreated her to let none in the house know his affairs nor his parentage. When he had obtained her consent to marry him, he got her also persuaded, tho' against her inclination, not only to make
a pri-

a private elopement from her good lady, but also to carry off her strong box, in which there was not only a round sum of ready specie, but also all the lady's jewels. It was in the winter season ; he had a sledge and a pair of good horses ready, and suddenly drove her out of Moscow to a pit, where they throw all the dead bodies of felons and suicides, and such as have no relations ; there they ly and are buried by a bishop once every year. At their arrival, the villain ordered her to prepare for immediate death, telling her that this place was the burial house of felons, and, as he had brought her there, he was determined to put her to death. A peasant, some time before, going home drunk from Moscow, and not being able to weather the cold, and an extraordinary drift of snow, went under the cover of this pit, and fell asleep, but, by the noise of the threatenings of the villain, and the importunities of the poor girl, was not only wakened, but overheard their discourse. He, both brave and resolute, issued out, making a terrible noise, and threatened the villain, who, frightened out of his wits, leapt into the sledge, and instantly drove off, leaving the maid with her drunken, but generous deliverer. This incident was very lucky for them both, because had it not happened, the maid would certainly have been murdered, and the poor man had very likely been frozen to death. When the girl had recovered the use of her reason,

confined

she informed the peasant of every thing she had done, and all that she knew of the villain. Upon this he congratulated her, but carried her directly to the police, where they both made oath of what they knew: but as they themselves were unknown, they were confined till next day, when a message was sent to the lady, acquainting her with what had happened. The good old lady used all her influence to preserve her servant from the punishment due, procured her a pardon from the Empress, took her home, and got her comfortably married.

The police however lost no time in making proper search for the villain, and in a very few days got him, when, being convicted of his crime, he was broken on the wheel; and the lady got back almost the whole value she had lost. Long after this affair, the lady herself happened to be a patient of mine, and confirmed the foregoing account which I have given of it. From these two instances then, the great use of a good policy in a despotic nation is obvious to every one.

CHAP. V.

*Concerning the Policy of the Medicine Chancery
and Council.*

BEFORE I proceed to prosecute my Journal, it will not, I hope, be deemed improper

improper or unpleasing, that I here give some account of the medical department, and of its powers and regulations, to which I belonged fifteen years.

The supreme regulations of medical affairs were instituted by Peter the Great, who, when in Holland, got acquainted with a Scotch Gentleman, Dr Erskine. Peter loved this physician, and prevailed upon him to go to Russia: He gave him great encouragement, he was declared to be the Emperor's principal Physician, and Director-General of all Physicians, Surgeons, Apothecaries and their dependents within that vast empire, and Chancellor of a court, called the Medicine Chancery; where every thing relating to that business, and all the branches of it are determined. Peter also, as I was well informed, pressed the Doctor to be one of his privy council; but of this honour he would never accept; as he alledged, that altho' the Emperor had no difficulty of getting him acknowledged as such by the whole empire, yet he was certain, such a step would not fail to procure him, or any other foreigner, many enemies: But it was believed, that notwithstanding this, the Emperor very frequently consulted him. It was Dr Erskine who erected the Medicine Chancery, and planned out the fundamental regulations of it which are in force at this day. The Doctor was President of this Chancery, and appointed a Physician (two secretaries and many

many writers, &c.) as Vice President ; whose business it is to go to the Chancery once or twice a day, and stay in it two hours at least, in the forenoon; and, if needful, as many in the afternoon; he receives all reports from all the provinces in Russia, from the armies, and fleet: He is obliged to acquaint the President every morning and evening with whatever happens, and takes his directions, and issues out orders accordingly. There is one Chancery in St Petersburg, and one in Moscow. The one is subordinate to the other, as the court is at either of these places. The Chancery, upon any extraordinary affair, immediately conveens such a number of physicians and surgeons as the president shall think proper, nor may any of them be absent, except they are sick. On the principal chancery does every branch of the medical affair absolutely depend; nor dares any one practise in Russia, till he be examined and found qualified, either by the Chancery or its deputies, and get a written testimonial of his qualifications. All physicians must submit to this regulation, which effectually prevents quackry of all kinds. Some few quacks however, there are, tho' not in the imperial service ; but if any thing curious, uncommon, or remarkable, happens in their practice, they must immediately report the case to the Medicine chancery. The chancery buys up all drugs, and takes care that every

every drug be good of its kind. These are delivered over to the principal apothecaries who must account for every ounce. There are indeed some private apothecaries ; but they are as much subject to the rules of the chancery as those employed by the empire.

Every army of 40,000 men are allowed two physicians and a surgeon-general. Every regiment is allowed one surgeon and a mate : and every company is allowed two young men, who can let blood, spread and apply plaisters, and do many other small things. The regimental surgeons must be obedient to the directions of the physicians and their general-surgeon, either jointly or separately. The apothecaries must instantly dispense what medicines the surgeons require for the use of the regiments, if attested by the surgeon-general, or any of the physicians. The general hospital of the army must be visited by the physicians and surgeon-general, at least twice every week ; and every regimental-hospital, as often as possible, during the summer. The surgeons must visit all their sick twice every day, and if any extraordinary case happens, they must report it without loss of time to the surgeon-general ; and every regimental surgeon must report every month the state of the regiment, during the preceding month, to their surgeon-general. The surgeon-general makes out a general report of the sick of the whole army,

army, which, being signed by one of the physicians and him, is sent to the Medicine-chancery, by which means the Empress or cabinet, can every month, see the state of the army, in respect of health and sickness. Except for crimes of the deepest dye, no colonel dare arrest or otherways molest their surgeons; because they are accountable only to the medical department for their actions; and if they neglect their duty they are severely punished.

In case of an accusation by a commander against the surgeon, a memorial is made out, and sent to the surgeon-general. He is obliged immediately to take cognizance of the crime: If it is of such a nature, that he thinks the sick are not to be longer trusted to the surgeon, he appoints another, puts the surgeon under arrest, and reports to the chancery: The chancery orders, with the approbation and consent of the war-office, a council of war to sit upon the accused, consisting of five officers, and two old surgeons: Whatever is done, is signed and sealed up, and sent to the chancery, who have it in their power to put the sentence in execution, or else, (which frequently happens) to moderate the severity of it.

CHAP. VI.

Concerning the Hospitals in St Petersburg.

PETER the Great erected two royal grand hospitals in St Petersburg. A description of them will suffice to make any person sensible of the nature of the service in every hospital in Russia, as there is no difference in the regulations. One is for the army, the other for the fleet. They are joined together, compleating three sides of a very large square, In the middle of the side facing the river Neva, is a fine church for the use of both hospitals; the wards are very well contrived; the building is two stories high, and covered galleries go quite round both hospitals, so as any person may walk without being exposed to the injuries of the weather. At each corner of each hospital is a noble theatre, and dissecting chamber. I have known nine fresh bodies in it at once, belonging to the sea hospital. The theatre is large enough to contain two or three hundred spectators. Here are kept a very great number of curiosities, and chirurgical cases injected, or otherways preserved. It would be agreeable to the curious to have a historical catalogue and description of these curiosities; some of my preparations are thought worthy of a place there. Centinels are placed so as to suffer
none

none to go out or come in to the hospital, except proper persons. Several physicians belong to them ; a superior surgeon, and five ordinary surgeons, ten sub-surgeons or mates, and twenty students to each. A professor of botany teaches the students of both hospitals. Each hospital has a professor of medicine and surgery, and a professor of anatomy, and a limner is appointed to teach students to draw any part of the human body. The Professors of medicine, surgery, and anatomy, are obliged to teach and examine twice every week in their several hospitals ; but so that the students of both may attend each professor.

The professor of botany teaches every lawful day, during the summer. If any very difficult chirurgical operation is to be performed, the professor of anatomy is operator, unless he appoints one whom he can trust : but both physicians and surgeons should be present.

If there has been any dispute about a disease, of which a patient died, the body must not be interred until the cause of death is discovered by anatomical disquisition ; and the professor has a right to dissect a part of any dead body before burial : For the bodies of all malefactors, suicides, and all who die in jail before execution, are sent to these hospitals. Every morning at six o'clock, the bell warns the surgeons to get ready : At seven, it signifies

nifies their immediate attendance in the ward, where those who are wounded, ulcerated, or have fractured bones, or dislocated joints, are kept, or must make their repair from the other wards : In an instant all hands are at work, until all the ordinary patients are dressed.

Then succeed consultations about patients labouring under more troublesome diseases : Ordinarily, young surgeons give their opinions first, and so on till the eldest, joined with those of the physicians and operator. Every one has a right to plead : The greatest number carry their design, if supported by either a physician, or a surgeon of known abilities. When the operation is performed, the cause of the disease is always discovered, if it be a member ; and when death happens, the cause of it is likewise frequently developed ; but no man is found fault with, tho' his opinion should not be just ; but still it does him great honour who foretold what happened.

I cannot help here relating a case, which happened whilst I attended that hospital. At the exhibition of grand fire-works for the taking of Aſoph from the Turks, the tail of a rocket fell upon the head, and fractured the skull of a sailor, who was immediately carried to the hospital. Dr Mounsey and I attended, but could then neither speak the language of the country, nor high German, and but with few who understood Latin. The operator asked our opinion. We both frankly told him, that notwithstanding

standing they could not discover any fracture by any means they had tried, and that altho' the skull was laid bare, by a large wound, in which they could discover no fracture, we were yet of opinion there was a fracture near that place; and thought that the trepan should be applied without loss of time. The rest did not join with us; but the professor said that he suspected what we advanced was but too true. A day or two after that (for neither of us would take care of him, as our advice was rejected) Dr Mounsey and I, both then very young, observed that the patient was very stupid, which daily encreased, and that his eyes weremuchinflamed, and had not their faculties; that the flaver run constantly from his mouth, and that he seemed quite insensible of pain.

We, talking concerning him, and seeming to smile, were observed by the supreme surgeon, a proud man, and of no great learning, who desired Mr Hanhart, professor of anatomy, to ask of us "the cause of our mirth?" We were simple enough to tell him, which was the cause of great jealousy ever after; and I doubt not of our being so speedily ordered to the service of the navy.

A few days thereafter, the doctor and I returned to the hospital. I went to the chamber of anatomy (having been appointed to assist the professor to prepare lessons of anatomy some time before that) ac-

E

cording

cording to custom : The door was made fast with a bit of twine sealed, which, in Russia, is reckoned more sacred than even a lock. I, however, imagining it had been done by some young men, thought nothing of it, (because I had an undoubted right, by order of the Medicine-chancery ; nor could even the professor deprive one of this right, but by a counter-order from the chancery,) and therefore, with my knife, easily made the door open ; and observed a new body, sewed up in a matress, ready for burial. I instantly cut that open also, knew the face, and found that they had sawn the skull through, and not only found a great fracture, but many small ones ; and, in place of the left lobe of the brain, that space was full of putrid matter, &c. I instantly acquainted Dr Mounsey ; and left the body, without pretending to conceal what we had been about. Whilst we were talking of this affair, a young man, who spoke Latin well, came and asked us, If we knew who had been in the anatomy-room ? I told him all we had done ; and that I was ignorant the door had been made fast by order, or that a seal to a door, that properly belonged to me, could prevent my entrance, unless orders from the chancery were countermanded, of which I thought I ought previously to have been made acquainted, and finally that I should petition the Chancery properly concerning it. When he had reported what was said

said to the first surgeon, a council was called, and I was afterwards assured, that this affair had put them in no small fright. Lest I had put my threats in execution, the professor invited Dr Mounsey and me to supper, and enjoined us secrecy. He told us that he could not have his will for the first surgeon, who had great friends at court, and was also protected by the archiater; and that such protection was the principal cause of his almost always having had a majority of votes against him. Tho' this affair has but a very bad appearance, yet many excellent operations were performed, and many notable cures perfected during my stay in this hospital.

From this ward, the surgeons proceed with the physicians through all the remaining wards: The surgeons mates write down in a day-book what the physicians order for every person; to which book their names and diseases are prefixed. After all the patients have been visited, the surgeons mates go with their students to the apothecary, where they attend till the medicines are prepared; carry them to the respective wards, and exhibit them as was directed: One of the surgeons in ordinary watches by turns (this is called *dejour*) in the hospital every day; nor is it lawful for him, who is on watch, to go out of the hospital, unless he get another surgeon to supply his place; and they must both go to the surgeon in chief, and acquaint him with their agreement

agreement. The rest of the surgeons may attend their private patients, but must return at 7 o'clock p. m. The mates, as they are not allowed to practise, nor the students, can go no where from the hospital, without leave from the principal surgeon.

Reports of the number of sick entered, cured, dead, and remaining, with the names of the different diseases, are regularly sent to the Chancery every week. There are no want of all sorts of attendants. The best of food is plentifully allowed them by the physicians order, as also drinks and decoctions of all kinds; nor are the most expensive wines spared, when necessary. If a complaint is made either of the physicians, surgeons, or their mates, for non-attendance one day, they are mulcted in one month's salary; and, on those who bear no rank, corporal punishment is inflicted.

By every hospital is appointed an officer whose business it is to provide all sorts of provisions, and keep a just account of the same: A number of writers are appointed to assist him. He has also the charge of the soldiers who keep watch about the hospital, but can punish none without liberty from the principal surgeon. The presidents of the admiralty and war-office either go themselves, or depute others to see that every thing is in good order; and the commanders in chief of less hospitals, at greater distance from court, attended by a
fiscal

fiscal, enquire every week, If the sick have good wholesome provisions, and well-dressed, according to the physicians orders? Though the physicians, surgeons, &c. give due attendance, yet if any complaint is made, which I have known to happen, strict inquisition will follow; but if the complaint is groundless, the patient who made it is carefully cured, and, when dismissed, is severely whipped before the whole command.

If a delirious man is discontented, no notice is taken of his complaints. It is a regulation through all Russia, that every surgeon, whether in the service or not, is obliged in difficult cases to call for the advice of some regular physician or senior surgeon, whether the case is internal, or purely chirurgical; nor dare any surgeon perform an operation on any person, without previously having had the advice and concurrence of such, if possible to be got. If the patient should die, or have reason to complain, the presumptuous surgeon would not escape punishment. Where there is difficulty or danger, even physicians are obliged to call the advice of others, if to be had; and if they neglect to do so, and death should follow, they will not escape punishment. I knew two physicians who, for such neglect and malpractice, were instantly expelled the service. No apothecary dare give medicines without orders from a physician or surgeon. At every grand apothecary's shop a good surgeon is

is appointed with a sufficient salary to attend daily two hours forenoon and afternoon, to give advice to the poor; and if such are not able to pay for the medicines, the apothecary notwithstanding dispenseth them, and placeth such to the aid of the Empress. If any person, not having a licence from the Medicine Chancery, should presume to give medicines to patients, the penalty is no less than to suffer the knute, to be sent to the galleys during pleasure, and confiscation of all he has, one half for the Empress, the other to the informer. If any attendant or servant should give any medicines, meats or drink, to a sick person, not authorised by the physician, he shall not, when discovered, escape a severe whipping.

C H A P. VII.

Concerning military regulations.

CONCERNING military affairs, I am afraid, I can say but little to the satisfaction of the gentlemen of that honourable profession. However, the following is a fair account of the military regulations in the Russian empire. In general, every person of the smallest distinction in the imperial service hath some rank: Thus, for instance, a ship builder is a Colonel, and gets the honour of that character paid him in all

all places. A Generalissimo is the highest officer in the army; Field-marshal, General Lieutenant-general, Major-general, Brigadier, and so on, form the several gradations, and end in the ensign. The inferior ought to report daily to his superior concerning the trust reposed in him; and his reports must be true, else he stands a chance of being reduced by a court-martial. Every inferior must readily obey the orders he gets from his superior, no matter how dangerous; and if an inferior is ordered on irregular duty, he dares not disobey the orders, but has it in his power to complain of his commander; and if it should be found that he has acted contrary to the regulations, unless the inferior pardon him before the court-martial is ended, the superior runs a great risk of being rendered incapable, at least for a time, during which he has neither rank nor salary. If a superior strikes an inferior, which sometimes happens in drunken squabbles, when the complaint is made, suppose by an ensign, the superior officer is obliged (let his rank be what it will) to appear before the whole command of which he is superior, and there on his knees beg pardon of the gentleman, receive the same blows from the provost, and pay three years salary to him whom he had injured.

If a superior insults an inferior, by names or language beneath a gentleman to give or take, he will be obliged before the command,

on

on his knees to beg pardon, acknowledge his fault, and pay three years salary to the inferior he had insulted.

C H A P. VIII.

Differences of ranks in the fleet and army.

THE highest officer in the fleet is Lord high Admiral, and after him are the Admiral, Vice-admiral, Reer-admiral, Commodore, Captain, and so on, down to the midshipman, who ranks with a lieutenant in the army.

The highest officers in the fleet and army are equal, and take their precedency only from the dates of their commissions. A commodore is brigadier; a captain in the navy is colonel; a lieutenant is premier major; and the regulations by way of command is much the same as in the army.

If a superior officer, whether in the fleet, army, artillery, or engineer, arrives in any garrisoned city, the commander of which is an inferior, he immediately makes his repair to him, reports the state of the garrison, demands his written orders, parole, &c. and thus resigns the command, while his superior resides in the place. Whenever a general officer enters a fortified place, a number of cannon are discharged, to denote the quality

lity of the stranger, that every one may take notice of, and properly respect him.

The late Empress Elizabeth, however, caused the officers, who had that honour done them, immediately pay the expence of the salute; which is not great, in regard they have all the materials, and make as good powder as any in Europe.

C H A P. IX.

The different degrees of honour in the army.

THE army has different degrees of precedence. The guards are the most honourable, the cuirassiers are next, the dragoons succeed, the infantry are the last of regulars, but one regiment demands the post of honour according to the date of their creation. The irregular light horse called *buzzars* are next in place: The Cossack granadier regiments preceded by the Cossack horse, are the last, except the Barbarian Calmuicks. Over and above these are the trains of artillery, a most glorious body of men. The cannon and mortars are all of brass. The engineers are likewise very honourably respected; their officers are equal in rank with those of the fleet.

In St Petersburg is a large palace, and many buildings belonging to it, as also a large fine garden: it formerly belonged to Prince

Mentzicoff. This man was, I think, disgraced in the Empress Ann's reign, when every thing he had was confiscated for the Empress's use. This great palace was allotted for the education of poor gentlemen's children in the military way, and the children of foreigners who had served the empire, and is called the *Cadets Core*. In my time, it was said to give good lodging to fifteen hundred, with their officers; now, I am told, the number is two thousand. A general officer, with a good salary and lodging, is commander in chief. They are divided into companies; every company has a captain, lieutenant and ensign, with rank equal to the guards. They are all lodged in this house, and there is but one grand entry into it. Children are received at the age of seven years. Here they are taught all the European languages, writing, arithmetic, mathematics, and every branch of natural philosophy, painting, dancing, and fencing. One hundred mount guard daily, and serve in every shape as common soldiers. Those who are not on guard are studying. The masters are not allowed to punish them, but only to mark down their faults: They are not to be whipped with a birch, or any other common rod of correction, because they are gentlemen; but have a piece of fine steel made in form of a sword, very thin, long, but not sharp. For slight crimes they are confined in the guard-house, for greater they must ride the wooden mare,

mare; for heinous crimes they are flogged with this sword. If they are not to be kept in order, they are severely whipped with rods, the Cadets uniform torn from them, they forfeit the title of gentlemen, and are reserved to serve as common soldiers in the army. If they are of age, discreet and diligent, they are advanced first to corporal, then captain at arms, lastly to serjeants of their own corps. When they have served honourably till they are seventeen or eighteen, they are dismissed to the army, as captains, lieutenants, or ensigns. None dare absent themselves without leave asked and given.

They bear a mortal hatred to the guards, and the guards to them, the effects whereof are sometimes very terrible, and numbers are killed on both sides. The guards are all accoutered with broad swords; the cadets with small tucks. If the guard-soldier gets one blow, the cadet is no more; but very frequently the cadet shuns the blow, and before the guard-soldier can be ready to give another, the cadet runs him through. In order as much as possible to prevent such excesses, the cadets were not allowed by the empress Elizabeth to go to the south side of the Neva with their swords, nor were the guards allowed to go to their side armed; and this prohibition has, I am told, had a very good effect.

C H A P. X.

Regulations for widows and orphans in the Russian service and religion.

THE male children of Russian officers have each of them, after their father's death, one fourth of his annual salary, till they are ten years of age ; the girls have the same till they are fifteen ; at which time it is thought the boys may be provided for in the Cadets core, and the girls are then thought to be fit for marriage. The widows, if young, have one year's salary, if old, they have one fourth, so long as they live, paid them annually.

Soldiers boys, as soon as they are born, enter into small pay till they are five years of age, when they must go to a military school : They have also a man's provision ; but the girls have no allowance. In every garrisoned town there is kept a military school. The boys have all of them one uniform. A captain presides to keep order : they also keep guard upon the school, and are taught to read, write, and keep accompts ; but if any of them rather chuse to beat the drum, or play upon any martial musical instrument, they are encouraged ; but the dolts, who discover no genius, are kept close to the exercise of arms. If an officer of rank approaches towards the school, the whole guard

guard turns out to pay their respects with their wooden guns, instruments of music, and drums, according to their ranks.

In Russia every religion is tolerated, providing strangers do not disturb the established religion, which is of the Greek communion. When Peter the Great first introduced foreigners into his service, many squabbles happened, and frequently murders; whereupon that wise prince ordered, under a most severe penalty, that none of the different religions should disagree with, or insult one another on that score; which order hath had its full effect, by preventing confusion, and promoting government.

It cannot be expected I can say much about the religion of the Russians, as it formed but a small part of my study. They worship every day, and the clergy are seemingly sincere and devout; but this is all farce and affectation, as their manners are motley, and their morality is deficient. This remark, however, will, I am afraid, apply, more or less, to all the preachers and professors in the world, namely, that their practice is not analagous to their precepts.

CHAP. XI.

Concerning the Russian religion, their churches, &c.

THE Greeks have many holy-days. I imagine they have at least a saint for every day in the year ; but they at the same time have many and very severe long fasts, which, one with another, engross nearly one half of the year: they have also auricular confessions, invoke, and pray to saints.

The walls of their churches are hung round with pictures of saints, and some of them extremely rich. They make use of fumigations and holy water, extreme unction, passports for the dead, and prayers after death to relieve the dead out of purgatory. They have many other ceremonies, which I do not remember ; but the burial of Christ, and the sanctifying of the water, are the most remarkable. They baptize by three several immersions, and making the sign of the cross.

I was once at the celebration of the burial of Christ crucified, and, as I rightly remember, it was performed in the following manner in the metropolitan church in Astrachan. From the altar, which is always on the east end, next to the *sanctum sanctorum*, and to which no layman may approach, a large stage was erected two foot above the floor, covered with carpets.

On

On the west end of this stage was a chair facing the altar, and a table before it, covered with clean linen, and on it a large silver basin of water, and a comb. On each side of the stage were placed six chairs. After a long service, the archbishop appeared in an ordinary fatten toga, performed some part of duty on the altar, and blessed the people three times: at each time he made the sign of the cross with two candlesticks, in one of which were three wax candles, in the other, two.

I was told the three wax candles were an emblem of the Ever-blessed Trinity; but I have forgotten the meaning of the two. After this solemn act was over, he disappeared, and passed into the *sanctum sanctorum*. Twelve bishops, or first dignitaries in the diocese, walked gravely, in superb sacerdotal, from the altar, six on each side of it, and seated themselves on chairs: They represented the twelve apostles. When they were placed, the archbishop again appeared, followed by two deacons and other church-officers, with fingers, chanting in the most charming manner. He, with an awful air and a solemn gait, walked along, and seated himself on the west end of the stage. The fingers stopped, and a deacon, with profound reverence, presented to him a comb, with which he combed his head and beard, then washed his face and hands, and girded himself with a linen cloth, the deacon carrying a bowl of water after him, wherewith
he

he washed one foot of each of the twelve bishops. One of them who represented St Peter challenged him for washing his feet : The discourse betwixt them was what happened betwixt Christ and Peter, when the Saviour of mankind washed his ministers feet. Then he was dressed by the deacons with the richest robes I ever saw, with a crown of gold upon his head, thick beset with pearls, diamonds, rubies, and other precious stones. The twelve bishops were also dressed in extremely rich cloaths, and many pearls upon them ; they had also every one a crown, but inferior to that of the archbishop. After this was ended, they all returned to the *sanctum sanctorum*, when one of the priests appeared, and told the audience that Christ was dead, whereon they departed seemingly in great sorrow. This was acted on Friday. The whole citizens appeared little on the streets on Saturday, and many of them eat nothing from the time of Friday's ceremony till Sunday morning ; but the cooks were every where set to work on Saturday afternoon, to prepare the most delicious meals of all kinds against Sunday. I was told, but did not see it, that a coffin was really buried on Friday, and was exposed empty in the church on Sunday morning. On Sunday morning, as soon as the clock had struck twelve, the bells tolled for service : However, I did not chuse to rise, but was told, that, after a piece of service was performed, the archbishop

bishop appeared, and, after blessing the people, assured them that Christ was risen from the dead. Upon this a rocket, placed at the church-door, was played off as a signal, which was immediately succeeded by a round of all the cannon in the citadel and the city, which never fails to give notice to all the absent inhabitants, who are not dead or deaf, of the final end of this affair; and then men and women congratulate one another upon this happy occasion, offering an egg, and a friendly kiss.

I was told, these last ceremonies are reckoned so essential, and are so strictly adhered to, that if a common soldier were to meet the Empress, and offer an egg, declaring his belief, he would have the honour of an imperial kiss. In short, after the last service is over, every one resorts to his home, and eats and drinks as much as he is able: For eight days the jubilee is universal; with some it lasts longer, which, in respect of my interest, I found convenient, as surfeits seldom go off without the doctor's aid.

The fast, which is very strict, continues seven weeks: This is succeeded by a voracious eating, and plenty of the strongest liquor, which never fails to bring many to their beds, and not a few to their graves.

C H A P. XII.

A description of the christening of the water.

THE following is a short account of the manner of christening the water, as I saw it in St Petersburg and other places. A square hole is dug through the ice about six feet one side, beside which are laid a great number of dales after the manner of a floor, fenced around with pales to keep off the mob, with a canopy over it. The service being finished, the clergy issue from the principal church, and form a procession, following one another according to their dignity, and walking four or five in a line, to the number of some hundreds. A great flag of the cross, a large lanthorn, and a large picture of our Saviour, or some saint, are carried amongst them. They proceed in this order, followed by the principal, and common people, singing hymns all the way to the river. The priests enter the square with but a few of the principal people, and there perform other parts of the ceremony. When the water is said to be sufficiently sanctified, a signal is given to 1200 guards, who surround the whole in three lines, and immediately begin a running fire, which is thrice repeated: then the great guns in the citadel begin, and also fire about

300 cannon thrice. Thus ends this ceremony, which is performed much after the same manner through all Russia. Many sick fanatics go to be immersed in this holy water, in order to be relieved from their complaints; and indeed many of them meet with their desire, but not in the way they expected; that is to say, they are killed by the excessive coldness of the weather, the ceremony being performed in the middle of winter. Many ignorant fools carry their infants, some of them new born, to be immersed: They are delivered to the priests, who duck them thrice over head and ears; some happen to be stifled, some have dropped from the priest's hands, and been carried under ice by the stream: When this happens, it is said that God took them to himself; but many more die of the cold.

C H A P. XIII.

Of the different degrees and customs of the clergy.

THERE are many different degrees of the clergy in Russia: They formerly had a patriarch; but Peter the Great abolished that dignity, as an office of too great power for a subject; in place of which he constituted a synod at St Petersburg, to be near the court. The synod determines all ecclesiastical affairs; but if it is thought to be of great consequence,

or

or if any new regulation is to be made, their opinions are first transmitted to the patriarch of Constantinople, and from him to the patriarch of Jerusalem, to get their assent and approbation : When this is obtained, it is a fixed law through the whole Greek church.

They have archbishops, bishops, protopapas, and papas, deacons, and monks ; I'm not certain but there are more degrees. The archbishops, bishops, or archimandrites are always elected from the monks, who take the vow of celibacy : The protopapas and papas, as they are allowed to marry only one wife, never can expect to rise higher in the church. If any of the clergy are found incontinent, they are put to death. The protopapas and papas, or ordinary priests, may marry one woman ; but if she dies, and he is afraid he cannot live without a woman, he must give up the church, and take to any other business ; then he may marry as other laymen do. None in the Greek church are allowed to marry beyond three times, and ever after, let his constitution be what it will, he can have no wife ; but the keeping of a mistress is not thought so deadly a sin here as elsewhere, if they only take care of their progeny. Adultery is reckoned a very great crime ; but the punishment, if only papa knows it, is many prostrations to some saint daily, for a long time : But if a husband can prove his wife guilty with another

ther man, she is divorced, and the adulterer punished.

The punishment for fornication is small; the priest appoints so many times invoking God's forgiveness through the day, accompanied with prostrations. And the law orders, if a child happens to be born, only that the man buy for his mistress a milk cow. All the time I was in Russia, I never heard of a child-murder but one. It is to be feared, that our absurd custom in Scotland of obliging offenders against chastity to perform public penance, the very dregs of popery, is the chief, if not the only cause of infant-murder; for our females have as fine sensations, and as feeling an humanity as any in the universe; but the dread of public shame and disgrace drives some of them to desperation, and makes them do with their hands what they abhor in their hearts. Fornication, no doubt, is an offence against order, but child-murder is so shocking an affair, and is so frequent in Scotland, that it calls aloud for means more powerful and more effectual than any that have been hitherto employed to prevent it: And were the clergy to part with, or knock down their stool of repentance, it would, I am confident, save nineteen of twenty children, who now suffer as a sacrifice to the terrors of the mother's shame.

Humanity will forgive this disagreeable digression, from which I return to my story.

There

There are many very beautiful monasteries in Russia, full of priests and monks: An archbishop or archimandrite generally presides in them. They are not only extremely rich in jewels, silver, and gold, but have annexed to them, for their support, many large territories: I observed, however, not without concern, that the peasants belonging to the church were kept in greater slavery and poverty than those belonging to the most profligate gentlemen. The only reason I can give for it is this, that the clergy, generally speaking, are derived from the dregs of the people, and have not had so liberal an education as the gentlemen, nor such noble sentiments of humanity instilled into their early years; hence that almost total want of it, when they rise to dignity and renown.

The gentlemen are very different now from what they were before: They are all of them employed some way or other in the imperial service; the old ones are dead, and, since the Great Peter's time, there are very few of them who have not made the tour of Europe.

The greatest care is taken of their education: They are not priest-ridden now, as was formerly the case; and were any of them to use his peasants as the priests do theirs, he would not only be hissed by the rest, but no man of either honour or judgment would regard him.

The present Empress hath, I am told, relieved countrymen belonging to the church from
such

such slavery. She has wisely conferred proper salaries upon them, which makes the hearts of thousands leap for joy. It was a bold stroke ! but it seems, hitherto at least, to have been done with great judgment. The design was good and god-like, and one fifth of the whole empire have felt its glorious effects, for I am convinced, that a number of people not inferior to that proportion were formerly subject to the sacerdotal jurisdiction.

C H A P. XIV.

Of the Academy, Admiralty, Castle, and Foundery.

THERE is an academy established at St. Peterburgh, by Peter the Great. This academy has a sufficient number of professors of all arts and sciences. The Great Peter was at much pains to give encouragement to the learned of all countries to come there. He endowed them liberally with royal salaries, and other emoluments ; but I'm sorry to say, that before I left Russia, some were dead, others had retired to their native countries dissatisfied, and the few who remained were much displeased at being neglected, and having an ignorant person placed at their head, as president ; who, by his great power, and protection from court, made the Empress believe that she had some of her natives qualified to become

become professors. The foreign professors, who were mostly Germans, could do no more than make their distress known to their friends.

The building is a noble large pile of two stories high, with a beautiful cupola in the middle, and an observatory. In the middle, below the cupola, is a square space about thirty foot long and thirty broad, without flooring, but a large gallery is built round it, one for each story, so that one can see from the pavement of the house to the top of the cupola. In each of these galleries are kept all manner of natural and artificial curiosities, as also a good library.

In one of the galleries in a case, is the skin of a Frenchman, tanned and stuffed: This has been the tallest man I ever saw. In another case was his skeleton, and a pair of breeches made of his wife's skin, also dressed; the leather was like to buff.

On the bottom, or pavement, stands the skin of an English chesnut horse, stuffed, saddled and bridled, and beside it the skeleton. Peter the Great used to ride this horse. Amongst the curiosities are very many abortions, and great variety of monstrous births, as also Ruysch's compleat collection. Here I saw the head of the unfortunate Miss Hamilton, a Swedish lady, who lost it for havnig murdered her child, unlawfully begotten; and this is the only murder of that kind I ever heard of in Russia.

This

This lady was maid of honour to the Empress Catharine. It is said Peter went and saw her executed: He wept much, but could not prevail with himself to pardon her, for fear, as is said, that God would charge him with the innocent blood she had shed. He caused her head to be capped, and injected. The forehead is almost compleat; the face is the beautifullest my eyes ever beheld; the *dura mater* and brain are all preserved in their natural situation: This is kept in spirits, in a large chrystal vessel.

I saw three great chambers; in one of them were all manner of earths, fossils, stones, ores, and natural metals, and minerals; in the other, all sorts of shells, mosses, corals, &c. and in the third sat in an elbow-chair, in wax-work, as big as the life, the Great Peter, dressed in a blue coat and waist-coat, and breeches, white stockings, his legs across, uncovered, having a head of short black hair, with an hanger by his side. About him in the room were all the fine mechanical and mathematical instruments he used to take delight in, and many pieces of work which he made without the help of others.

In another part of the house I was shown a very large globe; I forget whether it was celestial or terrestrial. It opened on one side, into which three or four people went and sat upon benches round a table. This was thought a very great curiosity. This edifice

was burnt down in the year 1745 or 46 ; but most of the books, papers, and curiosities in it were saved, and it was again rebuilt.

The Admiralty is on the south side of the river, opposite the Academy : It is almost a square ; one of the sides facing the river is fortified only with *chevaux de frize* ; the other three sides are surrounded by a high rampart of earth, upon a wall of stone eight or ten feet high, above the water of a very deep and broad fosse ; the rampart is flanked with good bastions, and the whole well stored with many brass cannon. There are three entries into the admiralty over draw-bridges ; on each side is one. Within this fortification are noble buildings, containing offices for every thing belonging to the royal navy. Many ships, sloops, and boats are built here. I saw the Royal Anne launched, a ship which carried 120 pieces of brass cannon. There is a tower, and on the top of it an high spear, covered with copper, double gilt, with a ship on the top of all, of the same metal, and also double gilt.

On the north side of the river, further to the east than the admiralty, is the castle, built upon an island. It has but two entries over drawbridges. A very large and deep ditch runs from the Neva quite round, till it again rejoins the Neva. I believe it is as strong as is possible for the best engineers to make it. The fortification is all of stone ; the walls are very high, and defended
by

by strong bastions, mounted with the best brass cannon. However, like the Tower of London, it is for little use, other than that of a state-prison. I have no notion it can in any shape protect St Petersburg, tho' I am positive it is capable, in a short time, to lay the whole city in ashes. Within this castle are many large magazines, all of them bomb-proof, and many necessary buildings, barracks, and prisons. In the middle of it is a very beautiful church, with a set of music-bells: On the head of the belfry is a high spear like that in the admiralty, terminating at the top with a cross richly gilt. The great Peter lies interred in this church, and I believe all the royal family from his time. A centinel stands day and night at the place of interment. Here is one very large ivory branch, fit to hold 100 candles, the handy work of Peter the Great.

Further east, on the other side of the Neva, opposite the royal hospitals, formerly taken notice of, is the foundery, a very noble building, with a spear topped with a burning bomb, all double gilt. In this foundery are cast the best cannon, mortars, and bombs in the world.

On the west end of St Petersburg, is a wharf for building ships of small burthen, and machines called camels; they are used to carry great ships over the bar, for Cronstad. They are hollow boxes, and so constructed

structed, that, when full of water, one of them brought to each side of the ship is sunk as low as to receive betwixt them the keel and bottom of the ship: Then they are locked together, and, when well secured, the water is thrown out by a great number of pumps. In proportion as the water is pumped out, so does the ship locked in them rise; for when they have the whole weight of the ship to support, they do not draw 4 foot water, and the bar does not exceed 6 or 7 foot. When the apparatus is adjusted, and there is but little wind, the ship is towed over the bar. I went once on board a 70 gun ship that was just got over the bar. When the wind rose and blew hard, I observed that the seamen were very much alarmed, for fear of their anchors not holding; but the ship was very fast in the camels, and the motion of both was scarcely perceptible.

On the west end of Vasilie Ostrof, or the westernmost island belonging to St Petersburg, Peter the Great built a fine well fortified haven for his galleys. I belonged to this port about 6 months: There are said to be contained in it 200 galleys: A few are sent to sea every summer, in order chiefly to keep the men in practice. A great officer, called general of the galleys, is commander in chief. No person is allowed to enter this fortification, unless he is well known. It is about an English mile to the west of St Petersburg

burgh, and from it you have a fine prospect of the gulf of Finland.

C H A P. XV.

Of the exchange and markets.

ON the west end of the same island is the custom-house, and the exchange, where, as in London, the merchants meet. The exchange is nothing else than a very great timber stage, built one half of it on that branch of the Neva which washeth the east side of the island. It is about 300 paces long, and proportionally broad. Near to it is a most noble magazine for preserving merchandize; it is a square built with brick, and has only one great port or entry. An hundred soldiers keep watch here day and night, that no harm may happen to the merchants goods. A merchant may have a very large room for paying ten shillings per month. The side of the stage next the river is well lined with ships of a smaller burthen, during the summer season, for the readier dispatch of business.

Near the southermost part of the city is the market-place, where all sorts of goods, both home and foreign, are kept to be sold. It is a very large square with four entries; on each side whereof is a range of shops, both within and without. There are covered galleries built

built quite round the square, both on the out and inside, that people may be defended from rain. A stranger need not, as in other places, hunt through this great city for what he wants to buy: A pleasant walk in these galleries will give him an opportunity of seeing many of the best people in St Petersburg, and all sorts of commodities in the world. The younger merchants and their servants guard it during the night, and in it great order and decency are always observed.

C H A P. XVI.

A general description of the City, &c.

THE river Neva runs out of a large lake called *Ladoga*, about twenty miles east from St Petersburg. In the mouth of the river is situated that strong fort called *Schlusselfburg*, which Peter the Great took from the Swedes. Prince Michael Golitzin took this city by storm. He landed his soldiers on the island in boats and canoes; many were killed by the artillery; the Prince Marshall was almost killed with a stone thrown down from the walls. Peter at a distance saw the great loss of his men; and, of six couriers which he sent to raise the siege, only one arrived safe. The prince however would not desist till he had taken the place; at which time he made
the

the Emperor sensible, that, if he had retreated, he would undoubtedly have lost all his men. This prince was the greatest general the Russians had, during the Swedish war. The lake is about 250 miles long, and very near as broad. Much merchandize was formerly sent from Russia and all the bordering countries about the Ladoga to the different ports in the gulf of Finland, and many vessels were annually lost; to prevent which, this great and magnanimous monarch (when he had taken Schlusselfburg, which signifies the key city, because it was a key either into Russia or Sweden), caused cut a large canal betwixt the rivers Volcholf and Neva, with twenty-seven locks or sluices, through which vessels may be conveyed quite safe for the small expence of a ruble betwixt these two rivers. This canal is on the west side of the Ladoga.

The topography of St Peterburgh is out of my plan; wherefore I shall leave it to others who have more leisure, after having made the following remarks. The guards are reckoned to be about 12 or 13,000; 15,000 field troops are also constantly kept in the neighbouring villages, called the *Petersburgh corps*. Every street, lane, or avenue, have many great gates which are shut in the night time: At each gate is a watchman, as in London, with a pole and a great rattle, (having convenient watch-houses through the whole city) like those with which the farmers here fright away the fowls.

fowls from their grain. These watch-men are appointed to prevent robberies and thefts, and to give warning if fire or any thing else alarming should happen during the silent watches of the night. No person is allowed, either in machines, on horse back, or on foot, to pass the streets without a lanthorn. If offenders are observed, they are seized, and sent to the police.

The north of Petersburg is built, as was said, upon islands, and has the advantage of water-carriage by the branches of the beautiful Neva, than which no chrystal is more pervious or transparent. The south part, which is properly called Petersburg, is also well supplied with all conveniencies by many canals, but chiefly two large ones, both deep and broad, the sides of which are faced with hewn stones. These canals are almost semi-circles. They take their rise out of the Neva on the east, and, running through the city, disembogue themselves into the Neva again on the west. Where the streets (which are all broad, well paved, and formed in straight lines, where possible), cut these canals, there are built large draw-bridges; and that the common people may have no pretext for leaving nastiness in any part of the streets, convenient places are built upon the banks of the river and its canals: Besides, all houses which are built two stories high, and in straight lines, are well supplied with every
conveniency

conveniency to keep the city sweet and clean. Any person wanting to have his court or part of his property improved, may demand from the slaves-prison as many slaves as are sufficient. The number is immediately sent under a guard of soldiers. When the business is compleated, it is customary to give the soldiers a small acknowledgment for their care; but little or nothing to the slaves. These slaves are delinquents who deserve death; but not having committed murder, they are condemned to slavery for life; and others, for smaller crimes, only for a limited time. Hackneys, porters, watermen, and all sorts of publick servants, have a number on their shoulders. They dare not impose on the stranger lest they be detected. They are all subject to the policy; and if they commit any roguery, it is not sufficient that they restore what they have taken, and pay all expences; but they will be severely whipped on the bare back. If they are not able to restore what they have embezzled, then they are not only whipped, but turned over to the galleys; where they must remain till the person injured is satisfied.

I

C H A P.

C H A P. XVII.

A continuation of the same, and of Peterhoff.

THe Empress has a large play-house in the city, with German and French actors ; also a set of Italian singers. No person pays for going to either play or concert ; but none are allowed to enter, except such as have tickets by authority. The doors are guarded ; and if any should get in without proper right, they would be severely punished. No irregularity can happen here, as the royal family are frequently present ; and it would be esteemed most criminal and inexcusable to commit any such folly in the presence of the Monarch of Russia.

West from St Petersburg, about 20 miles, is that beautiful country-seat of the Empress, called Peterhoff, after Peter the Great, who formed it. Here, on the top of a rising ground, is a palace, and a great number of necessary houses for attendants. The palace is built by itself, east and west : The front is south : It is situated in the middle of a large garden ; and in the centre of it, on the south of the palace, is a very large pond of water, clear as chrysal. When the Empress resides here, the guards are encamped in the garden to the south : Their tents and regularity make a very fine appearance. The garden

den on the north, is betwixt the palace and the gulf of Finland: It contains many acres of ground, and has in it many pleasure-houses, cascades, jetts, and waterworks. A large cascade 30 or 40 feet broad, runs from under the pavement of the palace, and, in its egress, falls down large steps made of hewn stone, sloping about 20 or 30 feet: Then it flies over the entry of a large grotto, 16 or 18 feet perpendicular, upon a pavement of hewn stone, and, at last, loses itself in a very large circular basin, of at least 40 feet in diameter, ever full, but never overflowing: From the middle of which, springs up a splendid spout or jett of water, which rises to a great height; and is, I was told, larger than the famous one in France. Out of the water, much to my agreeable surprise, arose a dog and three ducks, made of copper or iron, and in appearance all alive: The ducks flutter through the water quacking, the dog follows after them barking. There is, in a subterraneous place, a charming chime of chrystal bells, which play by water. The grotto, of which I spoke, covered before with the cascade, has two entries, one at each side of it. The entries are guarded by statues, which, when you are in, prevent any getting out, till the keeper, by turning a handle, puts a stop to them. These statues evacuate so much water, by vomiting and shooting out of stone pistols and guns, that, the keeper said, it would

would founder any man. The bottom is of channel, interspersed with a very great number of small pipes, imperceptible to the unwarly stranger. The keeper placed us in certain niches, where we could see every thing, and not a drop of water touch us. He then turned a handle, upon which these pipes played with very great force, so that the perpendicular jets rose near as high as the roof. The roof and walls were all covered with rock, and different sorts of moss. It would take up too much time to describe the various pleasure-houses, and vegetables in this beautiful garden; wherefore I shall only add, that, besides the curiosities before mentioned, there is a beautiful gallery full of the finest china in the world: At one end of which is a small, but commodious room, with a bed in it, whither the Empress sometimes retires to repose herself.

C H A P. XVIII.

Of Ranyboam, Russian laws, nobility and gentry.

WEST on the gulf of Finland, about four miles from Peterhoff, stands the palace of Ranyboam, straight south from Cronstadt. The palace was in my time but very indifferent; but it had a pleasant prospect from the gulf, and a fine quay for small vessels

vessels and boats ; but as I saw nothing there worth notice, I shall say no more about it.

It is well known that the monarch is absolute over the lives and fortunes of her subjects, of whatever condition they are, tho' few examples can be given, at least in our days, of the perversion or abuse of that unlimited power. Individuals may suffer innocently ; but that happens seldom, and commonly it proceeds from private piques, misrepresented by some of the monarch's favourites : But generally, either in the present or preceeding reign, the offenders are punished most severely ; and the innocent, if alive, are not only re-inflated, but shine with a distinguished lustre. If they be dead, then their children, or nearest relations, succeed to all their wealth, and often are favourites : This is extremely natural, as will be elucidated by several instances in the following remarks,

Ancient families are very much respected ; and whoever deserves well, will be still the more respected on that account, even by the Empress herself. Except titles, I know really no natural difference betwixt their nobility and gentry, as they have equal powers ; and all honourable distinctions arise from their different personal ranks in the Empire. The noblemen and gentlemen are lords over their peasants ; and may at pleasure punish them with whip and confiscation, without giving any reason to any person : But they have

have no power over their lives ; and therefore if, by excess of punishment, any of them should happen to die, their lords must even satisfy justice, by submitting to be hanged. The peasants, as hath been said, are absolute slaves to their lords ; and yet, tho' it may seem surprising, they are satisfied with their slavery. They commonly have good warm houses to live in : They have as much land as they can labour, and as much pasturage as they can store with cattle, without paying a farthing for it. They are obliged to work four days in six for their lords, and have two days in the week for themselves : But their lords often reap where they do not sow ; for when any of them appear to thrive and prosper, and to rise above his neighbour, his lord and master soon reduces him to equality, by levying a loan from him, never to be paid. Their lords can transplant them when and where they please, or sell them, either with or without their lands, to any person : And frequently it happens that they buy themselves ; that is, they get a good friend, or merchant, to buy them from their lord at a certain price, which the boor refunds, and then enters into the community of merchants. They take all care to promote matrimony early. They cannot force marriage by law, but if two be recommended, one to the other, by their lords or their factors, there is seldom any objection made ; nor is this to be wondered at, as the person,

person, who declined the match, would afterwards live a most uneasy life.

I have known young women of 20 years of age married to a boy of nine or ten : The reason given for this is, that the boy being a poor orphan, the girl is able, by her work, to maintain him till he is of years ; and if they had any cattle when married, they would probably increase to a good stock by the time he is major. If the woman proves with child, before it is thought natural for the husband to be the father of it, still, as she has a husband, no notice is taken of it ; but probably the priest may give her some private penance. The ceremony of marriage and consummation is not so ridiculous as it formerly was said to have been. The bride does not present her bridegroom with the whip. The bride and bridegroom are married in presence of their friends and relations at church ; thereafter they return home and make merry with their guests ; and, at the usual time of night, go to bed, when their friends leave them till next day. In short every thing is carried on with as great decorum and modesty as with us. And I never heard that the men treated their wives but with the greatest tenderness and affection. One great occasion why they are young married, is, that their children may be able, if necessary, to support them in their old age. I am of opinion, there cannot be produced many examples in Russia, that children

dren ever did or durst suffer their parents to pine in want, whilst they themselves lived in plenty. One remarkable instance, however, of the want of filial affection, I shall here relate: A peasant, a common soldier in the guards, behaved himself so well in many actions, some of them under the eye of the Great Peter, that, notwithstanding his native obscurity, and an entire ignorance of his parents, he was made captain of the guards, a rank equal to a lieutenant colonel in the field regiments. His father, a peasant, on the borders of Siberia, and in great want, got a passport for St Petersburg; and hoping to be kept by his son in easy circumstances, sold off his poor pittance; and after a fatiguing journey, at last arrived in that city. He soon learned where his son lived, and asked the centinel at the gate, to get some person to acquaint him, (who, at that time, had some company at his house,) that his father longed to see him. The soldiers, gathered together, scoffed and derided the poor old man; for the captain had given himself out for a gentleman by birth. The noise made in the court, soon brought out the servants, and at last the captain and his company, to see what was the matter. The captain ordered his old father to be beaten with rods, and turned out to the street. This did not fail to assemble a multitude of people, amongst whom there happened to be a writer, who carried the old
man

man to a house, and, for a small consideration, drew out a petition, humbly representing his case, and advised him to wait near the palace next day, at a certain place by which the Emperor usually passed, and then to hold up his petition to his Majesty. Next morning, as the Emperor passed by in a two wheeled-chaife, attended only by a footman, and observing the old man, he stopped, took his petition, read it instantly, and commanded him to be on the parade next morning, at a certain hour, telling him that the soldiers on duty should have orders not to molest him. Every thing happened as the Emperor had ordered ; and at the old man presenting himself to the Emperor, he ordered the guards to form a circle, and commanded the captain's presence. He then asked the captain, Whether he was not born in such a village ; and whether of such parentage ? And commanded that on pain of death he should tell him the truth, for he was determined to know his birth. The captain, considering that the Emperor would certainly discover it, and that the consequence of dissembling and putting him to so much trouble might not only be fatal, but probably provoke him to inflict a painful and ignominious death, fell at his feet, confessed the whole, and asked pardon. Upon this, that wise and wonderful Prince called for his dubine, (this was an oak stick kept in a scarlet cloath, and always carried

K

by

by a servant) with which he used instantly to punish slight offences with his own hand. This dubine he delivered into the old man's hand, and commanded him to use it as a father ought to do to disobedient and ungrateful children. The old man paused, and told the Emperor he could not strike his son while he had on him the uniform of the guards. This was agreeable to the Emperor, who ordered the captain to put off these incumbrances, when the father chastised his unnatural son with such wholesome severity, that the Emperor at last desired him to spare his captain, and ordered one half of his salary to be applied to the maintenance of the old man, and, with a firm tone, told the bystanders that what they had just now seen done was agreeable to the laws of God and the Empire, and that he was determined that these laws should, without regard to distinction of office, or dignity of descent, be put in execution against every one who durst transgress them. At the same time, he acknowledged that the captain was a brave officer, and that if he continued to behave well, he would endeavour to forget his unnatural crime, and advance him in the army according to the regulations, and his merit.

C H A P. XIX.

Institution of Companies of Merchants, &c.

PETER instituted, in every one of his cities, companies of merchants, subject only to burgomasters, bailies, or aldermen and their counsellors; but these people, formerly peasants, and raised from that rank to posts of power and honour, could not contain themselves within the bounds of moderation; wherefore this regulation was discontinued either in Peter's reign, or in that of some of his successors: But it was afterwards re-established, as will appear in the course of this work.

From what hath been said, it is easy to see a fine system of order and regularity in the Russian governments, but, being absolute, the people are sometimes subject to terrible oppressions, which, however, cannot be charged on the general plan, or the wise regulations of the great father of this vast empire, but on weak princes, and wicked ministers, who commonly pervert power, mislead the prince, and oppress the people.

The Russians, formerly savage, but now civilized, are a brave, and virtuous people, their manners mild, and their judges just; nor are there in the world better officers and bolder men. Merit in Russia is the sure road to preferment, and none but men are admitted

admitted into posts of honour and confidence : Boys, or milk sops, however nobly born, have no chance in the army or navy, nor can family-influence prefer them.

In Russia nothing pleased me more than their easy and elegant civility and discretion to strangers, a virtue this for which all ranks are remarkable. In Russia too, access to justice is exceeding easy and inexpensive, and it but rarely happens that the injured are not repaired.

Rudeness is scarce known in Russia, nor is this to be wondered at, as the Great Peter in one of his regulations expressly enjoins due deference to be paid to all degrees of men ; hence every person lives in peace, in quiet and security.

Britons justly boast of the British constitution, but it is a gross abuse of it to consider that of any other nation with contempt ; a practice, however, which but too often occurs. The author, partial to his country, joins in general in its just praise, but the gentle reader will, he humbly hopes, have him forgiven if he should here regret a grievous defect in our police, which deserves consideration.

I had a younger brother whom I brought up under my own eye, and who served in all the late wars in America and the West Indies, and bravely fell in driving off the enemy from a hill which covered the Moro castle,

castle, which he effected with a small number of his brave countrymen in the Royal. His colonel, a general officer, wrote a polite letter, now in my possession, condoling with his aged parents, and has it in these memorable words : “ I heartily condole with Lieutenant Cook’s aged parents, they have had a great loss in their son, but the Royal has also received a very remarkable loss of a brave gallant officer.”

It was expected, and one should think, not without reason, that Lieutenant Cook’s heirs would have received some small share, or pittance of the booty got at the Havannah ; but his friends were disappointed, though it is certain, he lost his life not by accident, or by acting improperly, but in bravely and exactly obeying the orders of his superiors. Indeed, if he had survived the taking of that city, his proportion of the booty would not have been a premium, as every one knows that the distribution of it was remarkably partial and unequal, repugnant to every just and proper regulation. Gentlemen, who are intrusted with a command, deserve, no doubt, the first distinction in dignity and emolument ; but it will be hard to find a police or political arithmetic, sufficient to warrant a scheme of division, by which one or two got all, and 20,000 men got in a manner, nothing. A police so partial and improper, should, with submission, be amended ;
for

for however officers, unwilling to disturb the public peace, may find it convenient to connive at such an oeconomy, it has a natural tendency to repress ardour, and extinguish emulation; and therefore though gentlemen will ever do their duty, yet great efforts cannot be expected, nor glorious exploits be performed,

C H A P. XX.

What happened at Petershoff, and elsewhere.

HAVING made some general remarks upon the government, religion, and policy of Russia, I shall relate particulars as they occur in the course of my travels. Next morning after I arrived in St Petersburg, I went to the Medicine Chancery with my landlord, and produced the letter from Cronstadt to the Archiater. The secretary received it, but told me that the Archiater was at Petershoff, and was not expected till the Court returned, which was very uncertain: But advised me to go and wait on him there.

Accordingly, having hired horses, I next day set out with a Russian, with whom I could have no conversation. When we arrived, I dismissed my Russian, and walked towards the palace into the garden on the south, where I saw the guards encamped on the banks of a beautiful canal, with their officers

ficers superb tents next the palace. I spoke to many people, but I was understood by none. I walked till I was quite tired and well appetised, when I left this pleasant garden, not knowing where to go, nor to whom to apply. At last, it was my good fortune to speak to a German, a butler, very well dressed. He told me that he had been in England, asked me When I arrived? with many other questions; and very civilly desired I would go to his lodgings and accept of a collation. I was no way averse to that, and indeed he gave me plenty of meats, exceedingly well dressed, and as much Burgundy as I cared for, and rather more. He told me that he had no acquaintance of the Archiator, but that a surgeon to her Majesty, a countryman of mine, would be at Petershoff next day, and that I should be very welcome to a bed in his lodgings, as I would be very ill accommodated in the neighbouring village.

He favoured me with the knowledge of many things, and expressed his surprize that I had walked in the garden covered, without being affronted. He assured me that none were allowed to pass by the Empress's windows, but with their hats under their arms, and therefore imagined that the Empress had probably seen me, and given charge not to molest me: Probably this was true, for I had observed many chevaliers in their orders, and
others

others walking as he described them, but I looked upon them as fine gentlemen of rank and fortune just amusing themselves.

For all his kindness I returned him my unfeigned thanks, and begged him to accept of some money for my good entertainment. At this he smiling said, that he sold nothing; and that none who had the honour to serve the Empress durst take any thing for any little civility they might have in their power to shew to strangers.

I then told him that I wanted to go for Cronstadt, and that I would return next morning if I could get a boat. He immediately went with me through the north garden to a key opening into the frith, and got me a place in a ten oared barge, in company with two gentlemen, with whom he spoke.

We immediately put off, and soon reached our port: The sailors rowed extremely well; I understood they belonged to Admiral Gordon. I attempted to speak with the gentlemen, but we could not understand one another, as they understood neither Latin nor English. They were, however, extremely polite, offering me a piece of fuggared muskmelon, very delicious, and also a share of their wine.

Next morning early, I hired a boat and went for Ranyboam: That palace is four or five miles south from Cronstadt, a most agreeable situation. From the windows, one
has

has a view of Cronstadt city, with all the shipping, and a very extensive sheet of water in the gulf of Finland. From this I walked to Petershoff being only three or four miles distant. Peter the Great took much delight in Ranyboam, and, if he had lived longer, would have made it more beautiful than even Petershoff. It was in Ranyboam, Peter the third was seized by his barbarous and traitorous subjects.

C H A P. XXI.

A Continuation of what happened at Petershoff.

AT my arrival I went to Mr Lewis Calderwood's lodgings, one of the household surgeons who had come from St Petersburg to change with another surgeon, a German called Menzies. After I had acquainted him with my business, we breakfasted together, and he immediately introduced me to the Archiater, one Dr Fisher a Livonian. It was easy to see that he assumed great state, and Mr Calderwood advised me to give him the title of Excellence, which I did not forget. He spoke in Latin very elegantly, and after having asked me a great number of questions, he advised me to teach surgery, telling me that though my education that way might be very good, yet he could not think my experience

perience could be great, considering my youth; and in short that he would grant me a good salary and horse, servants, and firewood.

I returned him my most respectful acknowledgments for the care he expressed for me, and candidly confessed that though my experience could not be called extensive, I had yet made as good use of my time as was in my power, and that I was ready to perform any piece of surgery, which he should appoint. I told him, that a long and lingering disease had reduced me to what he saw, and which might cause him think me younger than I really was. But I assured him that though I had come to Russia to have the honour to serve the Empress, and was ready to go any where, yet I was determined never to commence schoolmaster, for two principal reasons; the first was that a sedentary life would never give me the smallest chance of recovering my lost health; and the next was, that I had a natural aversion from that way of life, and never could bring myself to submit to the drudgery of it.

At this he smiled, spoke somewhat to Mr Calderwood in the German language, and said to me that he would immediately order my examination, and that when he should arrive in St Petersburg, which would be in a few days, we should talk more about it. We then retired; I dined with Messrs Calderwood

wood and Menzies, and returned the same day to St Peterburgh with Mr Menzies, who, on the road favoured me with many a fine advice how I should behave.

He told me, under secrecy, never to engage but by contract, nor to sign any papers till some of my countrymen had explained their contents. He said that people spoke but little there, and that a word to the wife was sufficient. In two or three days thereafter I was brought to my examination before nine gentlemen, but only two of them could speak Latin; however one of them interpreted to the rest, and from them to me. Having finished it, they told me that they had little to say against my qualifications but that as I seemed very young they could not think my experience could be great. They examined me on anatomy, surgery, medicine and pharmacy. They proposed sundry diseases and caused me write such medicines, &c. as I thought fit for such complaints, and very politely dismissed me after they had kept me about three hours: However they gave me a few glasses of wine, and allowed, nay entreated me to sit down. My landlord, who was very obliging, told me that the examiners were very well pleased with my answers.

At the Archiator's arrival, I was sent for, he told me that it would be very agreeable to him if I would engage only for two or three years to teach surgery. This I absolutely refused.

fused, and insisted on serving one year at least in St Petersburg, either in the fleet or in the hospitals; he said that could not be granted, because he had already engaged five more than the ordinary number in the fleet, that the hospitals were over complement, but that, rather than I should return, he would send me to a good garrison, or to one of the armies then acting against the Turks, which I declined, took my leave, and resolved to return home.

C H A P. XXII.

The Author engageth in the Russian Service.

I IMMEDIATELY applied to Mr Rown-dox the British Resident for a passport, who sent a memorial by me to the college of foreign affairs. They told me to make my appearance to-morrow, and every day after that, I got the same answer, and this continued till I went to Mr Bell of Antermoney, told him that the British shipping were all going home, and I must be left, if I could not get home directly, in which case I should be obliged to submit to any agreement they might think proper. That truly worthy gentleman went with me; and expostulated with them so effectually, that they told him they were forbid granting a passport by a memorial

memorial from the Medicine Chancery. Upon this, Mr Bell procured a positive message from Mr Rowndox to the chancery, in which, as I was informed, amongst other things, he said that if the Chancery offered to stop my returning home, on the morrow he was to wait upon the Empress, and would not fail to lay the affair before her Majesty. This had the effect; the Chancery was so uneasy at such a resolute declaration, that they sent for me by the time I got to my lodging, and granted my demands the 30th day of September.

The Archiator told me that he would have a care of me, and be as a parent, providing I did not neglect my business, but acted according to the regulations. I bowed before him, but humbly observed that it could not be expected I could, as if I was inspired, know the regulations; because I was not only a stranger, but could neither read nor speak their language: At this he laughed, and said all that he meant by regulations at present, was only to attend the hospital, where I was going to be settled, twice every day; and in difficult cases to ask the advice of the physicians and surgeons.

This I acknowledged was most reasonable, and I assured him that I would pledge my life for the faithful performance of it.

He said he had sent orders to the supreme surgeon in the sea-hospital to cause a lodging
to

to be got ready for me, that it would be right I should go to him in a day or two, but that he had ordered to give me leave for one month to get all my affairs in order; and thus this affair ended to my satisfaction.

C H A P. XXIII.

The Author employed in the General Hospital.

I WAITED upon the supreme surgeon of the sea-hospital Mr Engbrodt a Swedish prisoner, in company with Mr Selkirk surgeon to the guards. Mr Engbrodt, received me very politely, and told us that he had got orders about me, he said that I might board myself at the gardener's, where all the gentlemen batchelors in both hospitals were provided with dinner and supper, and that I should always be welcome to his table, when it was convenient for me. He advised me to be sure to make my repair to the hospital precisely at the end of the month; because, whatever inclination he might have to befriend me, it would not be in his power; because he was obliged to make out regular reports and send them to the Chancery once, at least, every week; that though the Archiator might overlook it, yet it could add nothing to my character to begin my service with neglect of duty. I answered him, that

I did

I did not intend to take half the time the Archiator had been graciously pleased to grant me, and therefore desired he would give orders to have my lodgings soon put in order. I then took my leave, and in eight or ten days thereafter, entered upon my employ. In justice to the gentlemen in both hospitals, I must here confess that from them I received many and signal civilities.

I was also allowed a young gentleman, Mr Rosen, who spoke Latin well, to go with me as my interpreter when I visited the sick. I closely attended the anatomical preparations, and, when the work amongst my patients was over, I scarcely was ever out of the dissecting chamber. I had not followed business above a fortnight when Mr Hanhaft professor of anatomy, a Swiss, who had ever shewed me great friendship, and one of the best anatomists in Europe, came to my chamber, and begged of me as a mighty favour, that I would prepare the lesson for next day, in regard he had some business of much importance to transact that day in the city.

I answered that few things could give me greater pleasure than to serve him, from whom I had received so many marks of friendship; that I was truly proud of his thinking me fit for such employment; and that it would be most agreeable to me, if he would frequently honour me with it. He gave me the lesson, which I got ready long before

before night. Next day I was present when the cadaver was brought into the theatre. Mr Hanhaft view'd my work very carefully, and, as I was told by Mr Rosen, said a great deal in my favour. At the end of his discourse he asked me, If I was willing to prepare the lessons with or without his assistance as occasion might require? I answered, nothing could give me greater pleasure: Whereupon he read an order to the gentlemen in the hospital, letting them know that I was discharged from all business in the hospital, except when I chus'd to help, and that I was appointed by the Medicine Chancery solely to prepare the lessons: But I never neglected visiting the sick, though I was appointed to no particular ward, by this means I had it in my option to visit all the wards, without being a slave to any. Soon after this, the Archiator arriv'd to visit the hospitals, he sent for me, and said that he was well pleas'd with me, and would not forget to do for me better, I return'd him thanks for what he had done, and retir'd. When he was gone, the professor told me that the Archiator's son was to study anatomy in our hospital, advis'd me to make some preparations for him, and when he should be in the dissecting chamber that I should shew him any part he desired to be inform'd of. I took this in very good part, and immediately set to work, injected and prepar'd an eye with all its muscles, arteries,

teries, veins and nerves, also a heart, and varnished them : I got the small bones of the ear joined together in their natural situation within the cavity, carefully fawn asunder, and at different times I presented him with these factitious affairs.

He frequently invited me to visit him, but I always excused myself. Thus I lived much to my own satisfaction till March 15th 1737, when I very unexpectedly got orders to repair to the galley-haven and attend the sick in that place; because one surgeon was dead, and the other so far gone in a consumption that he could do but little service. Mr Hanhart expressed rather a greater dissatisfaction than I did: He told me that he intended to go to Leyden for one year, and take out his degrees as physician: For which he undoubtedly was well qualified. That he had told the Archiater of this long ago, and that he had recommended me to supply his place: With all which, the Archiater seemed very well pleased. He said, that he did not altogether despair but this might happen; because he was certain the Chancery scarcely knew what to do for qualified surgeons, as there was a daily loss of them in the armies. He said, that he hoped that was the Archiater's intention, because I was sent to no distance, and to be in a fixed place.

With regret I left this hospital, and the same day made my appearance at the galley-

haven to the residing commander in chief, who was a Greek, and, what is far better, a good man. He was about 60 years of age : I was much taken with him, and he daily invited me to his house. He was very sober and discreet, had only one daughter, a pretty lady about 17, and she was as complaisant as her father, who doated on her. I was so well received by this good old man that I had very near forgot the hospital, and indeed I lived in good friendship with all the inferior officers. I was appointed a boat with four oars to use as I pleased. Many officers and our general lived in the city, but it was my duty to go at least once a week to visit our sick in the general sea-hospital : For although there was a small hospital in the galley-haven, yet, by the regulations, I was ordered to send all patients, whose diseases would take a long time to cure to St Peterburgh. Our hospital was considered only as a place prepared for sudden ailments and accidents.

Next day I waited upon our general, an old man, and a Russ, whose name was Ivan Golovine. He received me very well. His adjutant desired I would take a glass of wine with him in his apartment, to which I agreed, and he told me that our commander was a man of no merit, and remarkably obstinate.

He

He said that he was indeed of a good family, and that was his only qualification; for there was not a single action that he ever did, or indeed could do, for the good of the Empire, and he was besides altogether illiterate.

This adjutant was a German, and a good scholar. He told me that Peter the Great sent for our general when he was young, and having been told of his character, desired him to live in the palace, or serve in his armies or fleet. The answer he gave to the Emperor was, that he wished he would know him no better than the late Emperor his father knew his Golovine's father. At this time it pleased the Emperor, and he wanted such people about him who without fear or flattery, would tell him what they knew.

Peter the Great appointed him an officer in the galleys, which he never commanded in person, and soon afterwards advanced him to the rank of general, but kept him constantly about his person. He said, at Karitzin when the Emperor was going to prosecute his war in Persia, this general was missing two or three days, nor could the Emperor get notice where he was; but as he was much given to drink, supposed he might be in some common house. The Emperor to find out where he was, and also to punish his pride, caused the drums to beat through the city, and at certain places, caused the crier

crier to make known to the inhabitants, that the general of the galleys was lost; and therefore ordered that whoever knew of him, should immediately make discovery, without loss of time, offering a reward to the discoverer of three farthings, but threatening punishment to any who should dare to conceal him.

This had the effect : It roused him : He instantly deserted his drunken companions, went to the Emperor, and expostulated with him about affronting in so public a manner an officer of his rank, threatening at the same time that he would be revenged.

This pleased the Emperor, for he kept him by way of a buffoon, and consequently allowed him all liberty of speech. The Emperor used to take an hour's sleep after dinner which is the custom in these countries : He loved the fleet as is well known to excess.

A fleet of small vessels at that time lay at Tzaritz and, while he was sleeping in one of them, Golovine ordered all the bells in the city to be rung, and at the same time to make an alarm with all the drums ; which in Russia, is a certain sign of something extraordinary.

The Emperor disturbed out of his sleep, made enquiry at the officers on board concerning the cause of this alarm. They all saw there was no fire in the city, but could not conceive what was the matter ; wherefore the Emperor went to the commandant

mandant to enquire. He knew as little of the cause as his Majesty, but said that the general of the galleys had given such orders: All search was made for him, but he was not to be found.

At last Golovine, who perfectly knew the Emperor's way, stayed so long till he thought the Emperor would be pleased to see him again, he was only hid in an old cask which was in the house where the Emperor resided when in town. He told the Emperor that was the revenge he took for the affront he had given him.

The Emperor's anger being over, Golovine got off, but was seriously advised never more to adventure on such daring actions, lest he might suffer the loss of his head. Many such stories were told of him, but this is sufficient to shew that the man was admired only for his folly and impertinence.

The Empress Anne took pleasure in plaguing him, and the more rude he expressed himself to her, she liked him the better, however the greatest lord durst not affront him; for, though he could do little or no good, he was yet able to do, and had done, much harm.

The galley-haven is truly a pleasant fortress: It is situated on the west end of Vasilie Ostroff on the east end of the gulph of Finland, and communicates with St Petersburg with a prospective cut through the woods. I was told there were 200 galleys kept here,
and

and I believe there are not many fewer. I have frequently seen them, though I never numbered them. They are drawn out of the water and kept under shades in the winter, but they are easily launched, when needful. The garrison keeps a good look-out, and will permit none to enter without orders from the main-guard, though men of distinction, and acquainted with all the officers.

C H A P, XXIV.

The Author receives orders to march. Great conflagrations in St Petersburg, and the criminals punished.

ONE day Mr Farcharson Professor of Astronomy came from the Academy to drink tea with me, but, although all the younger officers had studied under him, and particularly the gentlemen at that time on guard, whom he well knew, he could not get admittance till the commander gave orders. Indeed the Captain ran to the gate, and conducted his old regent with great deference to my house. When seated, the good old professor told him, that he was glad to have lived so long as to see many gentlemen in the fleet, formerly his pupils, of distinguished learning, who could prescribe laws to him. Compliments on both sides were not wanting. I spent my time in this pleasant place,

and

and amongst agreeable company, only till the beginning of August, when one morning I was surprized with an order from the Medicine Chancery for me to attend the admiralty, and get ready to march to a village on the river Don called Cotchloff, distant about 30 or 40 miles from Asoph, which now was in possession of the Russian army.

I acknowledge it surprized me not a little, yet after reflection I found that I had no reason to complain, since I had lived in St Petersburg one year. But, before I enter upon my travels, I again must say I never had spent a year so pleasantly as at this place, nor did I ever meet with any thing incommodious during that whole time, nor any thing which could give uneasiness to any of my agreeable neighbours, except two very terrible conflagrations in the city of St Petersburg.

The first happened in May or June, and burnt down many fine palaces, besides her Majesty's great dispensary, and the Medicine Chancery in that street called the Milion. The other burnt down some hundreds of houses, mostly indeed of timber, in that part of the city called the Little Moriskoy.

Here I was present, and happened to stand by the side of a canal near a great brick house belonging to a prince, all in flames. The roof was fallen in, and few of the bystanders were taking any notice of it, when it suddenly

denly blew up with such a shock as made the earth tremble where we stood.

The day was serene, little wind, but very hot, but in an instant we were all covered with so thick a smoke, that the sun could not be seen for some time: In a minute however, after the blast, or less time, many chairs, tables, and other pieces of furniture, some of them half burnt, fell from the air into the canal adjoining, without hurting any one person. It was indeed fortunate that none of them fell on the other side of the canal where were very large and costly magazines of hemp, ropes, cables, pitch, tar, &c. belonging to the Empress, for had the fire reached that magazine, all the English merchants houses and the Admiralty would have been destroyed.

It was found out that the fire was set to the houses in different streets at once, so that the poor inhabitants could scarcely save any thing, and before any help could come, the whole Morfkoy was in flames. Three incendiaries were taken, two men and a woman, these I saw executed a few days thereafter, in the ruins of the Morfkoy. The men were each chained to the top of a large mast fixed in the ground; they stood upon small scaffolds and many thousand billets of wood were built from the ground, so as to form a pyramid round each mast. These pyramids were so high as to reach within two or three fathoms of the little stages on which the men stood

stood in their shirts, and their drawers. They were condemned in this manner to be burnt to powder : But before the pyramids were set on fire, the woman was brought betwixt these masts, and a declaration of their villany, and the order for their execution, read. The men called out loudly, that, though they were guilty, yet the woman was innocent, however the woman's head was chopped off. For they never expose the persons of women, either by hanging or burning, let their crime be what it will. Possibly had the Empress Anne been at Petersburg, the woman would have been pardoned ; it was said however, that the proof was very clear, and that the woman knew, that the villains were determined to commit this horrid crime, some days before it happened.

No sooner was the woman's head chopped off, than a link was put to the wooden pyramids, and as the timber was very dry, it formed in an instant a very terrible fire : The men would soon have died had not the wind frequently blown the flames from them ; however, they both expired in less than three quarters of an hour, in great torment.

An accident happened at this execution, which amused many people. Immediately after the men were dead, a young airy writer, very neatly dressed, was running through the ruins, in order to see the execu-

tion: The whole ground was covered with the charcoal from the late conflagration, so that none were safe to go any where but on the paved streets: As the Russians are obliged to keep their streets and houses sweet and clean: Every house has conveniences for that purpose, and the poor writer, gazing at the criminals, as he hastened towards the place of execution, plumped into one of these above the middle. Many of the guards, and others, not satisfied with scoffing and laughing at the unfortunate writer, threw into the filth pieces of burnt wood, bricks and stones, with a view to splash him all over. Such treatment sharpened the ingenuity of the distressed writer, and fired his resentment to the highest pitch.

As they were very near him, he threw plenty of the fetid stuff about him, bedaubed many, and forced them to retreat to a greater distance, by which means he got out without great interruption, but his rage was so great, that instead of going home, he run amongst the guards, who he imagined were the cause of the ludicrous condition he was exposed to. Many of them he bedaubed, well knowing they would not escape punishment for having their cloaths so damaged: Indeed I believe the Russian guards were never put to such a shameful flight.

C H A P. XXV.

Anecdotes during the Author's stay in St Petersburg: Coins, Weights and Measures.

MANY very entertaining and magnificent fireworks were exhibited on the river Neva, and grand illuminations for the success of the Russian arms against the Turks, so expensive and grand that many people skilled in such works, said that they did not believe the like had ever been seen in any part of Europe: The rockets were terrible. The charge of each large one was said to weigh an extraordinary weight, and when they had risen to an immense height in the air, they burst with an explosion equal to that of a large cannon, and exhibited many fire balls, of various colours, falling down to the earth: A great variety of wheels, and many other things whose names I am unacquainted with, were played off, so that in midnight, one might have seen as clearly as in mid-day. The grand illuminations were placed on a large timber building of two stories high, and a great length, erected on the north side of the river opposite the winter palace. The lamps exhibited flames of different colours, representing the last city or fortification taken from the Turks, such as Asoph, Perecop, Kinburn,

burn, Kinbam, &c. Before the fire works were played off, there was erected upon the river a large tall mast, on which was hung a white sheet of cloath, as broad as the sail of the largest ship of war, but longer, fire was put to this as the signal for beginning: The flame ran up the sheet instantly like a flash of lightening, but left upon it the figure of the city, for the honour of which the works were to be played off, in a deep and glossy fire which continued ten or twelve minutes, before the sheet was destroyed. Whilst the spectators were observing this figure, all the lamps were expeditiously lighted, which, as was said, exhibited the same figure, but in a much more extensive space, and these continued burning the whole time, and even longer than the fireworks lasted. As the timber galleries were upwards of two hundred foot long, the regularity and dispatch in performing these wonderful works no doubt surpris'd me, and they had much the same effect upon people more acquainted with them.

As I was a stranger, and neither understood the manner nor language of the people, I laid down a plan of behaviour, which was to remark the ordinary customs of the people, and to use all the gentle ways in my power to make them understand me. I meant no ill, and never to shew anger or resentment, but with a resolution to put my threats in as compleat execution as I was able, and to go as little out
in

in the night time as I could, which I doubt not was the cause of my escaping many troubles and affronts at first.

I shall make two or three remarks of what happened to me during my stay at St Petersburg. I went into the great square before the summer palace to see the first regiment of guards exercised called Preprosensky, consisting of betwixt five and 600 men. I walked towards a canal which surrounds the palace and gardens, in order to get behind the guards, and get out of the croud.

Looking up the canal, I espied on the opposite side a magnificently rich tent, the first time I saw the Empress, accompanied with a great number of ladies and gentlemen. It was easy to know her by the respectful distance the ladies and gentlemen kept; the gentlemen were all uncovered, I thought it could not be taken ill, if I went a little nearer to get a view of the Empress and court, but walked very cautiously with my hat under my arm. A lord called out and made a motion with his hand towards me, and thinking I had transgressed, was going off, but with my eyes fixed on the Court, when I observed the Empress turn, and heard her speak; at which, the same person moved down the side of the canal nearer to me, and spoke, made motions, as I thought signifying that I should come nearer to where the Court was. At first, I dared not, but by the many motions

tions he made, I ventured forward, though slowly, and had the satisfaction to see one of the grandest courts in the world. The Empress Anne was no beauty, but had something so graceful and full of majesty, that it had a strange effect upon me; I, at the same time, both feared and revered her. The men were in the richest dress, and also the ladies, amongst whom were many very exquisite beauties: However I stole away, as imperceptibly and suddenly as I could.

The Princesses Elizabeth and Anne made very fine appearances and were both very beautiful.

At another time, I was invited to dine at Mr Selkirk's, who lived on the north side of the river, opposite the summer palace. I went to the common ferry, which I had upon former occasions passed many times: A great number of people went into a boat, which I supposed was to cross the river, but, to my disappointment, carried me up the Neva to the east of the palace, where I had never been: I payed my fare, went ashore, and as I could not get to the other side, wandered about seeking my way to the city; but met with difficulties from canals, high walls, and blind streets. At last, quite fatigued, I saw a gate open into a garden, and fine gravel walks, which afterwards I was informed was a garden and summer-house belonging to the Empress: Two granadiers stood

stood centinels at that gate, who would not suffer me to enter: I then returned to the stairs where I had landed, expecting when a boat should put off. The Russians are the most dextrous at finding out, and relieving the want of strangers, of any people, I believe, in the world. I had not stood long, when a waterman came and spoke to me, but I not knowing what he said, pointed to the other side, and shewed him a handful of copper money: He pointed to his boat, took me by the hand, and carried me to the port I desired, nor would he take so much money as I thought he deserved; for they dare take no more than their fare.

Another time after the frost had begun, I was walking under the shade at the great market-place, wanting to buy somewhat. At once, a Russian merchant took hold of me by the arm, saying something: He took a handful of snow, and was going to apply it to my face, when I twisted myself from him, but by a certain gentleness in his deportment, and anxiety in his countenance, I submitted, and he again seized me and rubbed one of my cheeks with snow till it glowed. I did not well know what to make of it, but was told at my return home, that my cheek was frosted, and that the Russians never observe that in any person, but they immediately rub the part well with snow, which indeed I have since

since experienced to be a safe and certain cure.

When I lived at the galley-haven, it was my duty daily to go and visit the sick officers who lived in the city, and sometimes it was late before I could return. I had been warned to take care not to go on the Prospective; because many people had been robbed and murdered there in the night time, I therefore generally went through a private road in the woods at a distance from the Prospective, A gentleman, lieutenant in the fleet, Mr Alexander Gordon having had some business in St Petersburg, and having a desire to take his bed in my house, lived with me some weeks.

One night we were late together in the city, and proposed to go home through the Prospective, especially as the night was not very dark. We had come near the end of the avenue, when four men rushed from the woods towards us: We both, resolute enough, drew our swords and were determined neither to give nor receive quarters. The rogues observing that it would hazard their lives and a detection, suddenly retired again into the woods, leaving us a free passage into the galley-haven.

I was obliged to attend the admiralty in order to get my dispatches and money for the journey, and horses. Thus I had attended daily for three or four weeks, and every
time

time applied to a secretary called Newleboff, a great rogue: His answer every time he saw me was, *Zaftra*, that is to say, to-morrow; not knowing the meaning of this, and that I might be blameable for not applying to others, I complained to one Gordon a secretary, and translator for the British, also by the admiralty.

He declined meddling in this affair, as he was afraid of getting ill-will from the Russian secretaries; but told me, that, notwithstanding bribes were on pain of death, forbidden to be either offered or received, yet that secretary would scarcely do any thing, unless forced, or without some acknowledgment. He was of opinion, I should go to the admiralty daily, and make signs to any gentleman I might see, and say what he had taught me. I no sooner had got my lesson, but I went, and it was my fortune to see the principal secretary, to whom I addressed myself in my jargon. Whilst I was endeavouring to make him conceive what I meant, a gentleman came from the board to speak with this secretary; neither of them could understand me; but this gentleman, who I afterwards learnt was procurator, took me by the hand, and led me to the board. An admiral, called *Muschiacoff*, spoke to me in good English.

This gentleman had been long in England, and had frequently shewn much favour to British subjects: To him I laid open the whole

truth: He desired me to wait a little; and gave orders in the Russ language. Soon thereafter, Nelewboff appeared, when he observed I was there, he changed colours, and no doubt said somewhat for his excuse, whilst he was speaking, he frequently looked to me, and put on an angry and disdainful countenance. I imagined he was accusing me, and knowing it must be false, said in Russ, "Te chudoi cheloveck," which signifies that he was a very bad man. I did not know that I had exceeded in saying so to an officer, but the Lords of the Admiralty fell into an exceeding fit of laughing, and without more ado gave him orders.

Admiral Mushiacoff desired me to go with him, and told me he hoped there would be no more delay, but if there was, he ordered me to wait on the admiralty next day. Accordingly we went out together; when we came to the outer room where the principal secretary and writers were, at the sight of us they fell into an immoderate fit of laughter at Nelewboff and me, which seemed much to disturb him, and going through the admiralty yard, he stopped, spoke in passion, and threatened, at which I clapped my hand on my sword and wanted to return; on this he changed his tone, talked calmly, and in the most abject manner took me by the hand, led me to his apartment, sent for Gordon, and begged all animosity might be

be laid aside, assuring me that things could not be furnished that day, but next morning they should be ready.

For once he kept his word, and I was dispatched without any further trouble. The admiralty, without my desire, also ordered an old marine, who could speak a medley of English and Hollands, which I had no difficulty to understand, to convoy me; this old foldier had been through that country in Peter the Great's time.

Before I leave this city, I imagine it will be agreeable to give some account of the money, weights and measures. The coin consists of ducats of gold, rubles, half rubles, or poltines, quarter rubles, or chetwerte rubleoff, griveners or ten copeaks, and copeaks of silver, five copeaks, two copeaks, half copeaks or dinishkas, and quarter copeaks or polushka of copper.

A Russ ducat is worth two rubles. A ruble is in our money much about four shillings and sixpence, the denominations of half and quarter ruble express their value; a grivener is the value of the tenth part of a ruble, as a copeak is the hundreth part. They also count by altines, which is at present no coin. An altine contains three copeaks. I never saw an account which mentions ducats. The highest denominations of money in their accounts are express by a sum of rubles.

Russian weights consist of zolotnicks, lotes, funts or pounds, poods and berkewitz. A zolotnick weighs two penny-weight 17 grains 1 fourth English. Three zolotnicks make a lote; 32 lotes make a pound. The Russ pound is exactly apothecary weight; forty pounds make a pood; ten poods make a berkewitz, and 63 poods make a tun.

Liquid measure consists of cruskas, vedros, stakans, anchors and hogs. Eight cruskas make a vedro, one and a half vedro make a stakan, two stakans make an anchor, six anchors make an hog, or, according to our language, hoghead, which signifies the same thing, and is the same measure.

Dry measure consists of vocemiks, chetvericks and chetworths: One chetverick contains four vocemicks, and one chetworth contains eight chetvericks, equal to 24 pecks, or six bushels English.

C H A P. XXVI.

Concerning Russian Measures of Extension.

THEIR measure of extension is thus divided and denominated; verschock, archine, 28 inches, fazen, verst: An archine contains 16 equal parts, called verschocks, a fazen contains three archines, and a verst is measured by 500 fazens. As seven
feet

feet English are nearly equal to a fazen, a verst is equal to 3500 feet, or 1140 ells English; one degree contains about 104 versts, according to the measure of Picardy. In my travels through Russia, I shall confine my measure to versts, except in desarts not measured, which are calculated only by hours, and this way of measuring is not very uncertain, providing you travel with the same horses, and at an equal pace,

C H A P. XXVII.

The Author leaves St Petersburg, Account of the Eams.

ON the 8th of September 1737, I left St Petersburg, and at four o'clock P. M. arrived at a village called Eamskoi. It is a suburb to the city, where travellers get horses, and all villages in Russia, which by the law are obliged to keep horses, are called Eams. These villages have a grant of so much land as is sufficient for their maintenance, and are therefore obliged to keep a number of horses, particularly for the use of the army or fleet, and are satisfied to take small wages for these in the service of the Empire.

Every Eam has proper officers appointed to see that dispatch be regularly given. They have also a cantoin in St Petersburg who superintends

perintends all affairs belonging to these Eams; and takes care that gentlemen from the army or fleet do not distress them. But if it happen, that, upon any pretence, delay should be made in instantly getting the horses ready, the express, whether officer or common centinel, has a power to bring them to reason with a whip, not sparing their starosts or superiors.

A remarkable instance of this kind happened at the time of my first setting out: A serjeant was dispatched from the army to the cabinet; he rode day and night till he arrived at St Petersburg. The Empress ordered him into her presence, to enquire particularly about the army, and observing the mark of a stroke upon his face, was pleased to ask the cause. He said, That the post-boy or eamshick, not riding fast enough, he therefore whipped his horse, and the boy gave him a stroke over the face. Upon this the post-boy was taken under arrest, and a certain number of eamshicks, or those post-people, were summoned to attend on a fixed day at St Petersburg, from all the Eams betwixt Moscow and Petersburg.

On the appointed day, the said post-boy was hanged, and an imperial decree sent through Russia, setting forth the crime and execution; and further declaring, that none, of what condition soever, should, upon any pretence whatever, molest, stop, or hinder any courier dispatched from the army or fleet,

to St Petersburg, or from the supreme cabinet to any province or city through the Empire; and that if camshicks should in any manner hinder or stop any express employed in the affairs of the Empire, such delinquents shall suffer death.

Here two observations occur, with which I shall close this chapter. First, The absolute nature of the Russian government; and next, The ready service that is given to its couriers, or dispatches, from one end to the other of that vast Empire, than which nothing can more advantage the affairs of state, especially in times of war, and on other important emergencies.

C H A P. XXVIII.

What happened to the Author in his way to Moscow.

AT this village 300 sailors were ready to march with their proper officers early next morning for Asoph. As I knew not any of them, I thought proper, with my old soldier, and two carriages, to proceed fifteen versts further, where there is a small village, and where a guard is kept to examine every one's passports. In this village I lodged, and proceeded on my journey early next morning; but had not travelled far, till I was overtaken

vertaken by the above-mentioned body of sailors, driving in carts like Jehu. One horse and cart were allotted for three sailors. They soon passed me: However, I happened to dine at the same village where they were. As my soldier could speak broken English, I went to their commander, acquainted him what I was, where I was going, and begged he would take me along with him, and order horses to be got ready for me with those belonging to his command, for which I should readily pay my proportion. This he not only granted, but let the whole command know my profession, that they might respect me as an officer belonging to themselves, and shew me all civilities.

At the same time, he introduced a boat-swain, an Englishman, of whose company, though not very refined, I was truly glad. We marched from this village till we arrived, without any accident, at the Pristan upon the banks of the river Volehoff, through a very woody country, but good roads and many villages, all the houses of which were built of wood, and the streets laid with the same materials. Every house of any consequence has a great gate, which opens into a large square covered deep with clean straw, and built on every side with wooden walls and timber shades, which prevent rain from falling upon cattle or carriages; for they have no other stable. I imagine it is a good easy contrivance,

vance, and better for horses than our stables, and although the frost is exquisitely intense in that country, yet their cattle have no other stable, nor have I ever heard that the cold hurts them, and they feed well.

The distance betwixt St Petersburg and Pristan is 115 versts: When we arrived there, the captain told me, That he was obliged to hire barks to carry his men to Novogorod, and that if I would go by water, I should have a cabin granted to Mr Rannie and me, for this was the boatswain's name. I accepted of his offer, and was transported up the river to Novogorod, distant 67 versts from Pristan. I paid one copeak *per* verst for one horse, from St Petersburg to Pristan, from Pristan to Moscow, and thence to Cotchalore, at the rate of six copeaks *per* ten versts; but I'm informed that travelling is at present more expensive.

The river Volehoff takes its rise from the lake Ilmen, runs through the city of Novogorod, and disembogues itself into the Ladoga lake. This river is extremely pleasant, is well stored with a variety of fish, and has plenty of water-fowls. On its banks are many large and populous, many sweet and pleasant villages. The country is really most delightful, abounding with every thing fit for man and beast. The soil appears to be light, but very fertile, and the only agriculture there, is that of turning up the clod.

Novogorod Velike, or the great Novogorod, is said to have formerly been a very great city, and indeed it is very probable it was so. It was said to have been destroyed by Ivan Vasilytch the tyrant, with such fury and unheard of cruelty, that I shall neither pain my reader with such cruel relations, nor help to perpetuate the memory of such a monster.

There are said to be no less than nearly 200 monasteries and churches in this city. I scarcely believe there are twice that number of houses, and those too very mean, and the people poor. Their houses, streets, and walls, are all built of timber, but their monasteries are very grand. Here is a citadel built of stone, but it is not a regular fortification. Novogorod Velike is the metropolis of a very large province of the same name. There are at present very many villages in Russia, much larger than Novogorod, and much better built. It may justly now be called the city of priests. It is a bishop's see. The metropolitan and others of the clergy, are said to enjoy very large revenues in land, if the present Empress has not seized upon part of them, which would undoubtedly be good œconomy, as these wretches are the very worst of tyrants over their fellow creatures.

The province of Novogorod is bounded by Ingermanland or Ingria on the north, Pskopskoi province on the west, the province of Moscow on the south, and Bicloozerske province

vince on the east. This province is betwixt 56 and 61 degrees north latitude, and betwixt 47 and 56 east longitude. The metropolis lies in 58 degrees 25 minutes north latitude, almost south-east from St Petersburg. The lake Ilmen is distant from the city south by west 11 versts, and is said to be 18 Polish miles long from east to west, and 12 broad from south to north. This lake is well stored with variety of fine fish.

As very little happened worth the reader's attention on my passage from Novogorod to Moscow, I shall set down the names of the cities, eams, and their distances one from the other, all the way to Moscow, and after that make some general remarks concerning the country, cities, and villages through which I passed.

Imprimis, To Brunets versts 25, to Zuilzoff 30, to Kreslitz 33, to Eashisbitza 40, to Zy-mygotze 23, to Earova 22, to Chotelova 38, to Veshnevolotehock 37, to Vidropskei-eam 33, to Torzchoak 37, to Medna 33, to Tweer 37, to Gorodyn 30, to Gavidova 30, to Kleen 27, to Binka 30, to Tchurno 25, to Moscow 28.

These are the names of only the cities or villages where I took refreshment, but there are more villages on the road which I passed through. I added the number of versts, and found them just 725, tho' I'm told, by a late admeasurement they amount to 784. No person

person possessed of the above route can be imposed on by the camshicks, which they are more ready to do to strangers betwixt St Petersburg and Moscow, than any where else in Russia,

C H A P. XXIX.

A continuation of the former.

AFTER we had lodged one night in Novogorod, we had orders next morning to embark and proceed by water to Brunets. This scene exhibited a great deal of tenderness betwixt the sailors and their wives, who had travelled from St Petersburg to Novogorod, to take their last farewell of their husbands, whom they had but small hopes of ever seeing again, not so much from fear of the war, as from the inclemency of the climes to which they were bound. The officers waited patiently for about an hour on the banks of the river, and seemed to sympathize with them in their friendly embraces; but at last, finding that orders and entreaties could not force the husbands from their wives, who clung to them, they sent some subalterns amongst them, who without ceremony not only parted the loving pairs, but used them so ill, as even shocked my humanity.

The

The bitter lamentations and fervent prayers of the women on shore, and the silent signals made to them by their husbands from the barks, were truly tender and affecting. At last, all hands were employed in warping, pushing with stings, and rowing against the stream, till we passed under the stone bridge up the river into the Ilmen lake, which was about the time of the morning prayers.

The Russians are extremely devout, and, if possible, will not let any opportunity slip in putting up their prayers to heaven, especially when they are to make very long and dangerous voyages or travels: They therefore ordered the barks to bring to at a monastery on the north side of the lake. I went into the church with them, where they used very many prostrations and crossings, whilst the priests were imploring heaven for their safety and success.

After prayers were ended, we, having a fair wind, crossed the lake, and arrived at Brunets, where we were soon furnished with horses, and set out about dinner-time, being the fourth day from St Petersburg, and took up our night's lodging in Zuilzoff, after having travelled through a very plentiful fine country. Next morning, according to my custom, I departed long before the command, and so passed through all the villages formerly mentioned, till we arrived in Tweer, without meeting with any accident.

This

This country, though more open than betwixt Novogorod and St Petersburg, is very full of woods. Hence, as I was told, a Russian peasant had begged leave of Peter the Great, to cut a small canal, in order to join a branch of the rivers Volga and Msta, which runs into the lake Ilmen ; and, in order to defray his expences, he procured a royal edict, to impose upon passengers a small toll at a bridge laid over this canal, and another toll for opening the draw-bridge to let barks pass and repass from the one river to the other. That great Emperor not only granted the boor's request, but nobilitated him, and made the tolls or imposts perpetual to him and his heirs or successors, providing the canal and bridge were kept in good repair, and reserved only free passage for his own armies and fleet.

The peasant performed with great judgment what he had proposed, and his successors live in opulence from the annualrents they get ; for by this canal a passage is opened from St Petersburg to Astrachan for small barks, and this has not only increased trade, but rendered the immense woods, in that distant country, useful even in St Petersburg and Moscow.

Valdoi is a very pleasant large village, and has a beautiful lake in full view of it. At two miles distance, almost in the middle of the lake, there is an island and monastery. The island is well covered with trees, and makes a
fine

fine prospect from the village. When a traveller enters this village, no matter whether Rus or foreigner, he is immediately surrounded with many girls, wanting to sell wheat-bread baked in a particular form, like to plaited ropes, which they call kringlkes. These girls seem to be a different people from the Russians. I was told they came from the borders of Poland. They are very pretty, and remarkably well coloured. They are also extremely kind and obliging to strangers, and will, I doubt not, for a small consideration, grant them the last favour.

C H A P. XXX.

A continuation of the same discourse.

EARLY in the morning we arrived in Tweer, crossing the great river Volga on a floating timber bridge. Tweer is a very large city, mostly built with timber, the streets are made of the same materials, so that when a fire happens in any part, it generally proves dreadful. The greatest part of the city is on the south-east side of the river. A citadel, surrounded with earthen ramparts and wooden walls, is on the north-west of the Volga. Tweer is now formed into a dutchy, and the territories subject to its jurisdiction are taken from the provinces of Moscow and Novogo-

rod. It is a city of great commerce, sends the produce of Russia all the way to Astrachan, and many other countries, by water, in flat, but very broad and long barks; and, in lieu thereof, it receives goods from India, Siberia, Persia and Georgia. Of what extent their trade may be, I cannot say, but it is, no doubt, very considerable.

On the ninth day from St Petersburg, we set out in the morning, and dined at Gorodn. I told Mr Rannie, that in the night-time I had a pair of new shoes and my buckles stolen from my waggon, notwithstanding I slept in it. He said that possibly this was the same thief who had attempted to steal his best coat and vest. After I was gone away, Mr Rannie rose and followed the thief, and with a hanger almost killed him; at the same time they were both seized and carried to the commander, who sent the thief to the governor, who also demanded Rannie, but the commander would not only not send him, but also refused to put him under arrest. The stealing of my shoes and buckles furnished Rannie with a fine plea; and this trifling affair employed the pens of the writers in representing it both to the admiralty, and the governor of Tweer.

C H A P. XXXI.

*A Continuation of the same, and our Arrival
in Moscow.*

FROM Gorodin we marched on to Moscow, where we arrived the twelfth day from St Petersburg. The country betwixt Tweer and Moscow is not so full of woods, but still there are very many, and though the soil is light, yet it produceth plentifully for man and beast; but the inhabitants are much given to pilfering, drinking, and many other vices. I cannot help observing here the magnificent prospect this metropolis (situated in 55 degrees 10 minutes north latitude, 55 degrees 30 minutes east longitude, distant from St Petersburg 730, some call it 734 versts,) made, at the distance of six or seven versts, for the many thousand turrets, most-ly covered with gilt copper, are wonderfully grand and beautiful; but at our arrival, I was not a little surprized to find, that, except a few palaces and churches, the greatest part of this superb city was built with timber. I was scarcely housed, when I was greatly frightened with a dispute betwixt one of my camshicks and my old foldier. It seems the camshick, asking more money than his fare, words rose high, and he reached a sud-

den stroke with a great stick, which laid old Firelock flat on the ground.

I was at no great distance, and, being then young and thoughtless, drew my sword, and, had not the fellow retreated, I should certainly have wounded, if not killed him ; but he and his comerade run to the other end of the court. By this time my old foldier had recovered his feet, and, tho' bleeding copiously, seemed to take little notice of it, but I was very much mistaken ; for he, with great deliberation, walked up towards the man that had struck him, who, fearing what was to happen, scrambled to the top of the shade. His neighbour, not thinking he would hurt him, though the villain had attempted to beat the foldier, stood still, but, at one blow with the great brass hilt of his broad sword, old Firelock brought him to the ground : However, I interposed, and hindered him from being further hurt. At the very instant in which my foldier had knocked down the one, the other slipping his feet, fell from the shade. He was nothing the worse of the fall, as he fell on his feet ; but, though lucky in this respect, the foldier gave him two blows on the head, both which reached the skull. I got him at last confined, stopped the blood, and dressed the wounds ; but the varlets, in place of returning me thanks, went off with their horses, threatening to have me and my foldier taken under arrest ; however, I heard no more of them.

C H A P.

C H A P. XXXII.

Short Observations on Moscow, its Bells, &c.

MOSCOW is truly a pleasant, large, populous city, and, being almost circular, is said to be seven versts in diameter. Having but little time to spare, I at present saw but few curiosities ; however, I went to see the great bell, which was then in a large pit. A fire had, about two months before this, burnt down near two thirds of this great city, and the belfry, being all of timber, shared the same fate ; the bell fell into the bottom of the pit, and had a piece broken out of its edge, large enough to permit any man to go into it. Its weight is said to be 443,772 lib. Its height is about 21 feet $4\frac{1}{2}$ inches, its diameter I could not tell, but it seemed to be very well proportioned. It was impossible to find out its diameter by measure, as its broadest lips were sunk considerably into the earth, so that they could not be measured. Mr Hanway says, its weight is 12,327 poods, = 443,772 lib. English ; its height 21 feet $4\frac{1}{2}$ inches, its value L. 65,681 Sterling, its diameter at the top 7 feet $4\frac{3}{4}$ inches, and at the base, he says, it measures 22 feet $4\frac{3}{4}$ inches.

I then

I then went to the top of a very high tower, called Ivan Velike, or the Great John, I suppose after the tyrant Ivan Vasilytch. From this tower I had a complete view of the whole city, which indeed made a very grand appearance. The weather being very cold, the Russians heat their stoves before daylight, and make use of fire at no time of the day, except to get dinner ready, so that the view is never, but at those times, obstructed by smoke.

Upon the top of this tower there are three bells, I think the least of which is larger than the largest in London. Under the tower is the antient Imperial palace, a large Gothick stone building. All these I have mentioned, and all the imperial antient archives, and different courts of justice, are in that part of the city called the Crimline, which is surrounded with a high brick wall, said to be about 2090 paces in circumference. I shall say little more about this city at present, but shall make further mention of it at my return to it, when I staid four months in it.

I went after this and visited Mr Turner, and delivered him a commission from my friend Mr Bell of Antermomy. He detained me to supper, and sent me home in his coach. On my way home, I was stopped a short time by a party of dragoons, who patrol through the city in the night-time, notwithstanding there are many thousand citizens who keep watch

watch, like our watchmen of London, to prevent robberies, thefts, and incendiaries. After a short examination, the dragoons looked into the coach with a lanthorn, and let me pass.

C H A P. XXXIII.

The Author leaves Moscow.

IT was now the 20th of September, and the frost was setting in very fast. At Peterburgh I bought a very long good morning gown lined with fur; and I hoped, that, as I was travelling towards the south, I should stand in need of no other covering to keep me from the cold, but in this I was much mistaken, and indeed for some mornings past I had been obliged to get out of my waggon, and run on foot to keep myself warm. I was advised therefore, by my soldier and landlord, to buy an wolf's skin fur, and lucky it was for me that I followed their advice; for without it, a large furred cap, and the best boots, I could not have stood out the journey, as the cold was so intense and severe.

Next morning, so soon as the ports were open, I left Moscow, and proceeded in my route to Taverhoff, through the following cities and villages, with the numbers of versts annexed to them, paying at the same rate as I had

had done from Novogorod to Moscow *per* horse. The 300 sailors I never saw after this day, and was now obliged to travel only with my old soldier. Thus equipped and furnished with provisions, I took the following route: Polonna Gorra 5 versts from Moscow, to Pachra 29, to Molodie 20, to Laperna 16, to Serpuchoff 25, to Lyriti 10, to Veolmen 25, to Vasham 15, to Tula Eam 30, to Dedi-loff 10, to Bocharoditza 25, to Kirsofske 12, to Mekilshchoka 10, to Krushova, all desert, 30, to Echvim 15, to Polne, all desert, 45, to Elitska Eam 25, to Tsvala 22, to Kassia 17, to Sellochilnie Eam 25, to Konhalodes 8, to Voronits, all desert, 12, to Taverhoff 10 versts. In all, from Moscow to Taverhoff, 437 versts.

Though I set out from Moscow early on the 21st, yet I could proceed no further than Polonna Gorra, on account of my soldier having drunk too freely with our landlord at Moscow, so that I only marched to Pachra late in the evening; after that I continued to travel through the above-mentioned villages, without meeting with any thing remarkable, till I arrived at Tula, (on the 23d) situated 54 degrees 10 minutes north latitude, and 55 east longitude. Here I was detained very agreeably five days, by a general having taken all the horses from this Eam the day before I arrived.

Tula

Tula is a very large village, and in it are many forges for making small arms for the use of the army, and a foundery for casting hand-granades and larger shells. A few officers and artillery-foldiers superintend this work. They told me that the number of workmen consisted of about 2000, and many masters; that it formerly belonged to Mr Dimidcoff, a rich Siberian merchant, who was the first that wrought the great iron-mines of Siberia; and that in Siberia he had at least 100,000 men at work. Peter the Great gave him great privileges, and, among others, a liberty to engage, for the working in these mines, all vagrants and villains, who were afraid of being impressed into the army, or of punishment due for their crimes; besides, many thousand criminals who did not deserve death, were sent there to work for a fixed time, or during their lives, at a very small wage.

But I was again told, that the Empress Elisabeth had nobilitated the grand-children of the old Dimidcoff, redeemed the grant of Peter the Great, and put the iron mines into the possession of the crown; but I have a strong suspicion this will not succeed, for certain reasons, which I may afterwards have occasion to mention.

C H A P. XXXIV.

The Author's journey from Tula to Taverhoff.

HAVING staid at Tula five days, and been most agreeably entertained by the artillery officers, I left it on the 28th of September about one o'clock P. M. I had not travelled four versts till I began to experience to what distresses travellers are subject, and must submit. A north east wind blew violently, accompanied with a very smart frost: The road here was deep, from the rain that had fallen, and from the marching of some soldiers to one of the armies acting against the Turks; but notwithstanding the frost, it was not hard enough in many places to bear up our machines. The puddle, however, froze to the wheels, and we were frequently obliged to halt and cut it, to make them turn round; add to this, the snow drove so furiously in our faces, that we lost our way, nor could we see twice the length of a horse before us. Thus fatigued, bewildered, and afraid of being frozen to death, we were ready to despair, when, in an instant, we heard the barking of dogs at no great distance: This dispelled our fears, revived our spirits, and following the sound,

we

we soon arrived at a small village, called Dediloff, belonging to an officer in the guards.

We proceeded to a great gate, as the custom is, and desired admittance for the night. Two servants, armed with halberds, told us in a surly manner, that we should have no harbour there, and threatned our lives if we attempted to force our way. Old Steven, for that was my soldier's name, recommended himself to St Nicolas, screwed his bayonet on his musket, and swore that the first man who durst to advance, should instantly be sent to the devil. He then, by the assistance of our camshicks, got on the top of the gate, and made as if he intended to fire into the court; upon which, the party thought proper to retreat into the house. The soldier opened the gate, and let us all in. He next desired me to put on my sword, and screw the bayonet on my fowling-piece, for he said, there was no trusting to these wretches, which I believe might be true. I did as he advised, and in this manner we entered the house. When we came to the door, Steven again let them know, that if the least violence was but offered to any of us, none of their lives would be spared; that, as we had the honour to serve the Empress, we were determined rather to die like men, than to be frozen to death.

But how much was I surpris'd, when we entered into a large room, to see a very pret-

ty lady furrounded by many maidens ! I made her all the compliments I could, and ordered Steven to assure her we were in the service, and that I would answer for the behaviour of my people, providing her's were quiet; and that I always slept in my travelling waggon, and only desired, that he and the drivers might be allowed to sleep in some warm room ; to which she agreed : She appeared however somewhat fullen, and while we were taking side-views of one another, an old man, with a long white beard, entered the room, and, after having enquired into the cause of the disturbance, told me, that he was very sorry that it had so happened, but added that the authors should be punished. He said, that young lady was his son's wife, and that her husband was in the army ; that he himself had long served Peter the Great, and consequently wished well to the army ; that the village was his, and but a little way from our right road ; he pressed me to go to his house to partake of a supper, to which I had not the smallest objection.

Indeed, this old gentleman regaled me in a princely manner : He said, it would be impossible for me to proceed in my travelling waggon if the frost continued ; and therefore ordered a great sledge to be fitted up to receive my waggon with its wheels ; which was so expeditiously done, that when I took my leave of him to go to bed in my waggon, every

every thing was fixed ; and, with much difficulty, I was allowed to give his men a ruble for their trouble.

A travelling waggon is a most convenient vehicle, made like to an oblong coach, with a coach-box for the driver to sit on, in which are placed a small bed and pillows: It is covered with leather, and lined with baize. I therefore rather chose to sleep in my waggon, than in a room full of people and nauseous smells, and indeed, with the help of good furs, and a wax candle, burning half an hour after it was buckled up, I stood out the greatest frosts very comfortably. This old gentleman was a most agreeable landlord, his company such as I loved much : He gave me a short history of the life and actions of Peter the Great, of which he was very capable, as he belonged to the guards, and many times had fought under his immediate orders, and near his person ; and indeed he was so wonderfully agreeable and entertaining that had not Lethe overcome Steven my interpreter, I believe neither of us would have thought of sleep till early in the morning : But we parted at midnight, and I never saw my friendly host again, for next morning, before I awakened from sleep, we were some miles distant from this village.

After this, we passed on till we arrived at a single house, near a village called Echvim, situated on this side of a desert, 45 versts over

over, where nothing but sky and snow was to be seen, without meeting any thing worth relating. The Isba, or warm room was very large, but a number of masons and other labourers had taken possession of it in their way from Voronits, so that there was scarcely room for me to sit down.

I expressed my fears to Steven, that they might steal something from my waggon; and therefore, as we did not intend to stay long, proposed that he and I should interchangeably watch the waggon and baggage. But he was of another opinion, and advised me to charge my pipe with tobacco, and to put near the top some *assa foetida* mixed with tobacco, for, said he, "When you have lighted it, and they observe the *assa foetida* begin to burn, then to blow from me, I will answer for the consequence." The common people in Russia are extremely religious and ignorant, and consequently extremely superstitious. They believe that no person, or nation can have the least chance of being saved, even by the merits of our Saviour, unless they profess the Greek religion: they imagine that they have less or more some correspondence with the devil: and that those who profess any branch of medicine, are his most intimate friends, hence, the following affair will not surprise the reader.

I did as the soldier had directed, those next me perceiving the smell of something
more

more than tobacco, began to retire to the door, where Steven did not fail to raise their suspicions and fears to the greatest height, but when I had blown out the rich fumes of *assa foetida*, they reached those on the top of the stove first, who, coughing excessively, jumped down with the greatest precipitation on their neighbours, frightened out of their wits, and, in the hurry to get out of the room, some were not a little bruised. Upon their retreat, Steven entered laughing, and told me that were we to remain all day and night, the landlord himself would not enter the house, that he was certain their priest would be sent for to sanctify the house by prayers, holy waters, and fumigations: He said as it was Lent, if he had not got them out, he must have fasted that day, as he had nothing to eat but what I left, and this by the Russians is esteemed *pagana*, or unclean. This indeed, would have been severe treatment to Steven; for none loved their paunch or ease better than himself: Thus having dined plentifully, and fed our horses, who had performed but a small journey: We proceeded, at about the distance of a quarter verst, and passed all the miserable people, whom we had turned out, some sitting on the snow, others running about, others playing at hand and foot to keep themselves warm. We had not travelled four versts further, when a young Cossack came up with us,

at

at which time our eamshicks were insinuating that they were afraid they should not find the road.

I enquired of this young man, he said, he was not acquainted with the road, but believed we were very right, I promised him a trifle, if he would keep us company, to which he agreed. We had not travelled much further till the sky, which was serene before, began to overcast, and was succeeded by a thick fall of snow. The young man at this seemed much dismayed, and told me that many people had been lost by such accidents, who were well acquainted with the desert at other times, in short, we continued to travel on, in the heavy fall of snow, till the young man rode forward, and for some time disappeared, but at last returned and assured us, that we were right, for that he had discovered a valley hard by, well known to him.

We proceeded to this valley, where he desired us to feed our horses. We did so, and then proceeded. We had hardly gone five versts further, when the sky turned clear, the wind abated, and in short, the cold decreased so much, that it appeared to be thaw. The horses were much fatigued, though we were still about 10 versts distant from our designed village.

Afraid of being obliged to take up my lodging in the desert, I walked on foot, and
obliged

obliged my soldier and the rest to do the same, but at last, being constitutionally unable to bear much fatigue, I was obliged to betake myself to the waggon. We had not travelled far, when I observed the soldier sitting behind my waggon, I upbraided him, and ordered him to get off; he did so, and, as I believed, imagined I could not proceed without him; for he laid himself down upon the snow, nor offered to stir, when we were at least a verst distant from him. I was told this by the eamshicks, and indeed saw him myself, but afraid, Steven would become my master, had I yielded to his humour, I ordered the eamshicks to drive on to the village, nor did I discover my thoughts about him to any person: I had it always in my power to have sent in search of him, but deemed it right to allow a reasonable time for his arrival; and indeed, he did not deceive me, for he arrived before I expected him, and for his excuse, he said he was seized with a violent cholic, and could not so much as acquaint me with the rest of his complaint.

I told him that I understood his disease, that I was determined not to be trifled with, and that he might provide himself with meat and drink for the future unless, he were to behave better in time coming; for though I could speak but a little of the Russ, I would get him punished for his obstinacy. Upon this, he asked pardon, and promised to act so no more:

Thus

Thus we were friends, and he behaved well till we arrived at Taverhoff.

The truth was, he was afraid that the wolves would have made a meal of him, and I was of the same opinion, and this made him repair so very expeditiously to the village. Having arrived safe at Polno 45 versts from our last stage, I was as glad as a general could be of having gained a victory, for indeed, we ran a great risque of losing our road, of being frozen, or starved, or of being devoured by wolves, who are sometimes seen to the number of three or 400 together, and so furious are they, as I have been told, that they enter villages, and sometimes devour men and beasts.

From Polno, we met with nothing worth relating, till we arrived at Voronits, though we passed through another small desert betwixt Koukalodis and Voronits, being only 12 versts. Having day light, we marched on 10 miles further to Taverhoff, situated in 52 degrees, 30 minutes north latitude, 57 degrees, six minutes east longitude, where I arrived on the fourth of October: Thus in 26 days, I marched from St Petersburg to Taverhoff, distant from Moscow 443 versts, in most books, it is called Towrow very improperly: Let it therefore once for all be remembered, that I spell names according as the Russians sound them. If any stranger was to pronounce them as I have spelled them

them, every Russian would readily understand what is meant, but if they were to enquire of a Russian according to the pronunciation of former writers, I can engage that none but such as are used to foreign pronunciations, could understand what was meant : My knowledge of the Russian language makes me quite certain of this point.

Captain Carrabine, a Russian, who had been in England, and spoke the language well, was commander of the port. He said, that notwithstanding my delays at Moscow and other places, I had made a very expeditious journey, considering how heavy the carriages were to the small number of horses. Though from the map, it would appear that Veronits is not far from Moscow, yet the necessity to get provision and horses, oblige travellers to take a very crooked and round-about road.

Taverhoff it will appear is very near due south from Moscow : I was told, (for as all the country was covered with snow, I could be no judge of it) that the country is very rich in provision for men and beasts. I believe this to be very true ; for I experienced no want, and at such a small price, that it would seem incredible to people who never had been out of Britain.

As my stay in Taverhoff was very short, I shall say no more of it nor of Veronits till my return. At my arrival, Captain Carrabine

behaved most discreetly. He had me frequently to dinner or supper, and seemed as if he could not want me : He said my new commander Prince Golitzin was an exceeding good man, that he at present was in Kotchatoff on the river Don, not far from the city Teherkaskoi, which is situated within 20 versts of Asoph, well fortified with many cannon, and where the Hetman or Prince of the Cossacks resides, that he may have the earliest notice of any depredations from the neighbouring Tartars : He said, that as Mr Burman, the only surgeon they had to attend the officers, marines, and sailors belonging to the port, as also the hospital, was sick, and especially as he well knew the Prince, in about a month or six weeks, would return with his command; he, for these reasons, thought it needless to send me to Kotchatoff, where I would be very uncertain of finding him, since he, Carrabine, was certain, so soon as he should receive orders from the admiralty, he would lose no time in coming to Taverhoff.

Thus I passed my time in attending the sick in the hospital and garrison, till the beginning of December. About this time, one evening having supped at Carrabine's, he told me, that Mr Burman was out of some medicines; therefore, said he, I doubt not you'll readily gave him from your's what may be at present needful; that he was certain the Prince would take it in good part, and thank me

me for doing so. I answered him, that my instructions from the Medicine chancery ordered, that, by my oath to the government, I should carefully carry these medicines for the use of the men under the orders of Prince Goltzin my commander, and there break open the seal, and require a centinel, as the custom of Russia is, to be appointed, with his drawn sword, to guard these medicines, lest any might make free with them without my knowledge; and that I should not dare to give any part of them to any person, except such as were immediately under the Prince's command, as I should answer at my peril to God and the Empress.

I said, these were my orders, and that, tho' I was extremely sensible of the easy and elegant civilities he had shewn me, I was yet determined to act conformably to my instructions. I at the same time assured him, that I would not only give him and his lady proofs of my gratitude and respect, but was also willing to do every thing in my power for the recovery of the meanest of his servants. He answered, that he knew I had such instructions; that every one entrusted with her Majesty's medicines had the same; that, however, it was looked upon as a mere form, and that the Medicine chancery well knew, that their surgeons not only lent their medicines, but cured with them her Majesty's officers, their wives, children, and servants. I answered, that
what-

whatever others might do, I was determined, though at the peril of my life, not only to keep my oaths, but also my promises inviolable, both to her Majesty, and to all men. Upon this the captain began to show many airs, fit only, as I told him, to frighten children; and, amongst other things, he told me, that he would take Stephen from me. This, I assured him, was only in the power of the supreme court of admiralty, or of my immediate commander Prince Golitzin, and that, if he did so, I would immediately discontinue all duty, and have it decided by a court martial; and thus I left him. Next morning, as I was on duty in the hospital, a writer put into my hand a passport, telling me at the same time, that I must set out that very day. I commanded him out of the hospital, and consulted with Mr Burman what was to be done. He, well knowing how unfit he was, by reason of his disease, to attend the sick, and how uncertain his time of life might be, by a petition to the Cantoir, required that I might be detained in Taverhoff. So brutal was the vain Carrabine, that he gave no ear to this, but go I must. I acknowledge I had no liking to this journey in the winter season, though it would have been most agreeable in the summer, as my route lay thro' the pleasantest country of the Ukraine, on the beautiful banks of the Don, the ancient Tanaïs: However, I, in hopes the Prince might arrive

arrive every day, postponed it as long as I could ; and indeed it was six days after I had got my pass, before I thought to go in earnest. The incensed Carrabine imagined I was gone, as I had not appeared in public ; but that day, I walked by his house on purpose : He no sooner saw me, than he expressed his surprize how I durst loiter away my time. I told him, that I neither had received money for my journey, nor were any horses to be found in Taverhoff.

This was indeed, as intended, to him a reproof, but in a short time I had both, and, recommending myself to the guidance of heaven, instantly set out, on the 10th of December, accompanied with my old fellow-traveller, Stephen, and took the following route, for which I paid *per verst* as formerly.

To Usman versts 15, to Skorits 60, to Skeftacoff 35, to Pauloffsky 37, to Kashkin 20, to Mamonill 22, to Brutchock 22, to Matushka Loch 22, to Kazanka 22, to Moshack 38, to Molan 22, to Bushkonasten 23, to Uskadvid 21, to Uskaper 12, to Astratskaja 27, to Wisemadits 12, to Kaspopin 20, to Klidska 17, to Perikapska 50, to Grigoryofska 24, to Serotine 10, to Belaske 32, to Golobinske 45, to Petisbe 35, to Chirie 33, to Kizni Chirie 10, to Kakeiglikina 19, to Isauloff 19, to Zimalikie 7, to Kiriman 17, to Nagaskin 17, to Kurman 13, to Ugham 13, to Kostikin 13, to Ternoskoi 9, to Romanofskoi

24, to Kirgala 8, to Kamushink 6, to Bustriakke 10, to Karagla 3, to Michaelkom 14, to Nisni Michaelkom 3, to Kagalak 18, to Vedernik 7, to Babbe 4, to Zoloto 10, to Kotehatova 10. Thus I arrived at Kotehatova, on the 23d of December, by the route Mr Carrabine pointed out, being in all above 930 versts. This long journey I accomplished in thirteen days and nights, for when the villages were not far distant, I had fresh horses at every village, whereas in Russia one can have them only at Eams, but the Cossacks bear all burdens equally.

I shall now take notice of a few incidents which befel me on the road. First, I left Taverhoff in no good humour, by which means I had forgot to lay in a good store of fresh meat. Bread I had enough: Betwixt Usman and Skorits I met with nothing to buy; but near Skorits, as Stephen was upon the ramble, we espied at a post-house, a foldier and post-boy bringing betwixt them a very large pike on a pole; and, asking the value, they required three copeaks, which was very readily agreed to.

This good fortune was very agreeable, and would have been so, had they asked three shillings. We were told, that at Paulofsky, the Empress had another grand fabrick for all sorts of small arms. At this place we provided ourselves with provisions, and, without loss of time, set out, meeting with nothing remarkable,

remarkable, till near to Moshack, Stephen assured me that a kind of heath fowl, who had perched upon trees at no great distance, were deaf, and excellent food, and that if I could get near enough, without being perceived, I might kill some. Accordingly I got behind a large tree, at no great distance from them, and killed three, which, when falling, I observed the rest to look at ; but at last, whether they perceived me or not, they flew away ; however, these three were excellent food. The Russians call these fowls *gluchoi teterks*, or deaf, to distinguish them from another kind which hear well, and never perch on trees. At Molan I observed the streets were narrow, and I desired the magistrates, who are the most hospitable people in the world, that I might get a safe place to put my sledges in, for fear of thieves. At this they laughed heartily, and assured me I was now in the Ukraine amongst the Dons Cossacks.

In Russia, they said, there were thieves ; but it was scarcely ever heard that any thing was stolen by the Cossacks, for that thieves among them were instantly punished with death.

C H A P. XXXV.

*A Continuation of the same, and some Account
of the Cossack Government.*

I Begged they would give me some short information about their government, and they complied with my desire in the following manner: They, said they, were so far subject to the laws of Russia, as to oblige themselves to assist the Imperial army with a certain number of troops, when required: That they, being borderers with the Crim Tartars and Turks, were natural soldiers: That therefore they were under the protection of the Empress, but had their own Prince called Hetman Velike; That the Hetman was ordinarily appointed by the Empress, chosen from amongst them: That they made laws for themselves, providing they were not repugnant to, nor clashed with those of the Empire: That every citizen thro' the whole Ukraine, above 21 years of age, had a vote in every thing done; and consequently could not be ignorant of the laws which they assented to. They said, that when the army resided amongst them, it was not at all times agreeable, if not commanded by judicious men; that the only redress they had, was to complain to their Hetman, who represented their complaints to St Petersburg; and that most commonly

commonly they got redress. I indeed found afterwards, that the army was afraid of complaints from them. They told me of a theft of cattle which had been committed in a certain village by some Kalmucks, who immediately fled to the desert: That, without delay, the villagers gave their next neighbours notice, and these to others, &c. &c. so that in little more than 24 hours the whole Ukraine was in motion, and every village, or little city, sent out a party of horsemen to scour the deserts. In short the thieves were taken, with the horses they had stolen, and immediately conducted to the village where the theft was committed. The magistrates of that village convened the inhabitants, who encircled the town-clerk, priest and thieves in the market-place, under the canopy of heaven, and, after they had all heard what was alledged against them, and the defences of the thieves, the magistrates ordered the same to be read by the writer, and required the Cossacks to determine, Whether guilty or not? which is done by putting on, or off their caps, and the majority carries it; (the Cossacks never move their caps to one another.) It fell out that the Kalmucks were found guilty by a great majority. The priests then recommended to the thieves to make their peace with God, for they were instantly to be put to death. They were immediately carried in boats into the middle of the river Don, their arms pinioned,

and a parcel of sand, tied up in a cloath, put about their necks to sink them. Then, without further ceremony, they were thrown out of the boat. Their Lord offered to pay any thing reasonable to save them, but the Cossacks were inexorable; notwithstanding, he threatened to complain to the Empress, which indeed he did, but to little effect; for he was ordered to allow none of his men to sojourn in the Ukraine. They said their magistrates continued in office only one year; and that a poor man, if sensible and upright, had the same chance to be preferred as a rich one. It seems riches have no great weight, and are in no great estimation there; and indeed I never saw a beggar among them.

They have great plenty of provisions, and consequently are under no temptation to steal. I am convinced, that I did not pay a sixpence value for all the provision I had need of for me and my men, in travelling through their country; for, if I staid any time, their magistrates, for the honour of their town, used to send me fowls and fish, and a bottle of spirits, which Stephen loved well; as also some ale or mead: And, when they understood my profession, the sick asked my advice, for which they commonly sent fowls of all kinds, which I have often refused, because I could not dispose of them. The Cossacks are dressed in long *togæ* like the Russians, and the women differ from the Russian women only in this, that

that they wear on their heads a cap, with a front standing up about a foot above their heads, in form of a crescent, either embellished with ducats of gold, pearl, or beads, or all three formed together, according to their different fancies.

Rich people may have better houses than others, with a piece of ground inclosed for their use and conveniency, but the desert is free to them all alike; consequently a poor man, if he can purchase a cow and ewe, may have plenty before he turns old. They neither will make a present of, nor sell any young creature, saying, that it is contrary to reason to think, for as great a love as the Supreme Being may have for man, that his design was, that man should kill young creatures at pleasure, as it seemed in some degree to be a contradiction to the very design of the creation; and that none but crazy foolish people, and such as prefer pampering their bellies to every reasonable thought, can think otherwise.

They are all Christians of the Greek persuasion; but by the wars in Sweden, Poland, Turkey, and Persia, they are not near so superstitious as the common Russians; and, altho' they have a great regard for their priests, they will yet punish them, when guilty of crimes, as well as other men. Every man who comes into their country to reside among them, is made a denizon, and instantly has all the immunities and privileges of a Cossack.

Cossack. They will give to strangers all titles due to their rank in the world, but they think no title more honourable than to be called Cossack, meaning by that their freedom and honour in war, and honesty to every person, except enemies; nor can it be said that they are generous enemies, for if they cannot take prisoners easily, they murder them without any hesitation, alledging that it is the fortune of war, and that their enemies do just the same to them; but I have conversed with some Swedes and their offspring, who seemed well enough satisfied with their fortune, nor had they the least desire to return into their own country.

C H A P. XXXVI.

A continuation of the same.

I continued to travel night and day through the above mentioned villages, which, after we passed Serotine, are all surrounded with a *fossa* and rampart, having ordinarily two gates and some cannon, and indeed they have great reason to do so, as will be immediately seen. The Don abounds with many excellent fish, as sturgeons, stirlets, &c. and there is great plenty of game on its banks, which are covered with almost continued forests. The beautiful large grey eagle loves this land of liberty,

ty, and indeed, by his fearless freedom, made me think he was a real native. I wanted to try what execution a ball would make upon two of them walking at some distance, but the Cossacks prevented me, saying, that they were not afraid of man, and that they sometimes did mischief: That they made very free with their geese and lambs, and were known to fly away with the smaller sheep.

Belaske is distant from Gobulinske 45 versts. Betwixt these towns there are two roads, one upon the banks of the Don, the other through the desert. My Cossacks told me of them, and said the one through the desert was every way better, and that the other by the Don was through woods, and sometimes infested by the Kalmucks, very uneven, and the longest of the two: That the road through the desert was free of all incumbrances whatsoever; and that, at about 25 versts distance, there was a solitary mill, where we could refresh our ourselves and feed our horses. It is easy to imagine that I resolved to go by the desert, especially as it was in the night-time, which deprived me of amusing myself with the varieties and beauties of the country.

We therefore proceeded with good horses, arrived at the mill about ten o'clock at night, and no sooner had we stopped, than five stately clever young men came out, made us heartily welcome, and desired we would walk in, where there was a good fire, of which we

were

were very glad. They did not stop here, but offered us a glass of spirits, thereafter mead, and ale as much as we pleased, at which my trusty Stephen rejoiced, and took two or three powerful pulls, which would have soon stupified him, had I not ordered him to retire. A little after this, one of my Cossacks came into the mill, and, unperceived by the millers, gave a sign to speak with me. I went to the door, pretending some necessary business; but was surprised to hear the Cossack say, "Sir, take care of yourself and us, keep company with the millers no longer; some officers have lately been lost here, nor could they hitherto ever be heard of." Upon this information, I desired the Cossack to keep himself and his comrades in good order, and that I would, without loss of time, retire, as if I was to take a sleep, desiring him to send Stephen to me; for as yet, though I had learned many vocables, since I left St Petersburg, I could not keep up conversation, nor, in such an intricate affair, was sure but they, if villains, as I suspected they were, might find out my design.

When Stephen came, I begged to know if I could have a warm place or room to retire to, to take two or three hours sleep. They seemed extremely glad of this, told me that they had some zemlenkes*, and that I should have

* A zemlenke is a room well lined with timber, and covered

have the best. Accordingly they shewed me where I was to go. I ordered my bed and arms to be taken out of the waggon before them, and carried to the zemlenke, desiring Stephen to tell the millers, that a little sleep served me, and that none might disturb me for two or three hours, admonishing them at same time, that, as we were strangers, if we were unexpectedly disturbed, they would have themselves to blame if they were hurt, because, after such admonition, we would undoubtedly fire upon them.

Accordingly, I and old Stephen had one of these zemlenkes, and the Cossacks another, the millers retiring into the mill. When the mill-doors were shut, the Cossacks, with all expedition, yoked their horses, my foldier and I put the things into the waggon, and instantly drove off. Our way lying very near the mill-door, the noise which the horses and sledges made alarmed the millers, who came altogether in great haste to the mill-door, and, though their design was not known, yet we guessed at it. The soldiers and Cossacks ordered them to remain where they were, if they valued their lives. They took our advice, and were in the right, for every one of us were ready to fire upon them. When we had got out of danger, the Cossacks told me, that

vered with the same under ground. They are very warm, and not to be known but by a small door, and an opening on the top for a window.

that two or three officers, convoyed in the same way I was, set out by this mill, and never were heard of more.

That the neighbouring Cossacks had interrogated the millers, who denied their having ever had any knowledge about them: That an order, by the authority of the Court of St Petersburg from the Hetman, was that day received by the magistrates of Belaske, commanding them to make strict enquiry into the conduct of these millers; and lastly, as the millers were not of that country, consequently not well known, it was suspected they were the murderers of these officers and their convoy. They said, that next day they would be seized, and examined separately; and that this was the reason, why they had taken such care of themselves and me. I never had an opportunity thereafter, to learn any thing further about them.

Thus I continued my journey, till I arrived at Romanoffkoi, where the Cossacks, more scrupulous than their brethren, would not open the gate, though in the day-time, till they had carefully examined my passport. At this gate two cannon were charged, and a number of men in arms, with matches burning, ready to discharge the cannon. I was directed to go to the town-house where the Hetmans or magistrates waited for me (for every town in the Ukraine has a town-house, where all public business is transacted, which

is

is a good lodging for all travellers who have no right to regular quarters on the citizens. It is a large room, with seats and tables, and, in the severest frosts, always kept warm by the ipsauls, or town-officers.) When I arrived, they welcomed me, and produced bread and salt, which is usual, as I said before, for the honour of their town. They assured me, that yesterday a body of at least 6000 Turkish and Tartarian horse had left their town, after a smart siege of 48 hours: That within the town there were not at present above 20 young men able to stand on the walls: That their townsmen, in company with other Cossacks, to the number of about seven or 8000 were in the Cuban Tartary, making depredations among them; but that an ensign had arrived a few hours before me with some maials and 30 or 40,000 rubles for the troops in Asoph, and that he was determined to stay there till he could proceed with safety. They advised me also to remain with them, saying, that the government would justify such a resolution in so dangerous times, and that they would think themselves happy in having one of my profession with medicines, instruments, &c. in case of another assault, which they were in no small dread of. To which I answered, that it might appear very reasonable to them, but I observed it in a very different view: That I had sworn to evite no personal danger, when her Majesty's service demand-

ed my attendance : That they had just now seen the outlines of my orders, commanding me to travel day and night, till I had joined my commander : And finally, that, as it was agreeable to the regulations and common sense, I would stay that night, but next morning, God willing, I would proceed : That if I should happen to be unfortunate, no person would be to blame but those who sent me. Therefore I desired that men and horses might be ready by day-light to go with me, together with as many men as they should think necessary for my safety. They answered, that, from what they had said, I could easily see that they had no sufficient guard to send against 6000 enemies, but that I should have the same number of men and horses granted me, which brought me to this place, and also a sensible resolute man as a convoy, and advised me to keep a good look-out.

Thus having parted in friendship, I made my addressees to the ensign, to encourage him to go with me. He said, that he had a valuable trust, and only 20 recruits, who had never seen fire; therefore he could put but very little trust in them, and was determined to report this situation to his superiors in Asoph, and patiently wait their orders. My hostess, a young Swede, told me, that she had mounted the walls almost the whole time the enemy was before them : That she believed many
had

had been killed, for that they made three or four desperate assaults, but could not master the rampart; and at each time the old men, who played the cannon, had galled them excessively; and that, from the walls, she had seen them dragging off their dead men with hooks, which they carry with them, in order to conceal the number of their dead; and that I could see many of their dead and wounded horses about the town. She said, there were but few of their folk hurt, because they never appeared unless the enemy was at a distance, or just at the walls, when they never failed to give them a well-marked salute; immediately thereafter they jumped down, and charged, whilst the young men with some women remained, lest they had entered the town. She said much more to the same purpose, with which I shall not trouble the reader.

We set out next morning early, with great secrecy, and all the precaution we could, our guide riding a short way before us. We passed Kirgola sinoaking in some parts, as also Kamushink, and arrived at Bustrialke, a large village sinoaking in many places, but not a house standing. We observed at a small distance some ruinous houses, where the inhabitants used to keep cattle. Thither we went, and having fed our horses, and taken some refreshment to ourselves, set out again. Having passed Kargala, with only one house standing,

standing, in the door of which was a woman, who gave us her best wishes, and desired us to take great care that we did not meet with the enemy in the desert. The sun was set, and we still had 14 versts to go; however, it was our fortune that the desert was well covered with snow, and the frost very severe.

We rode on at an ordinary trot for about ten versts, when our guide returning, told us, that some men were upon the road; we consulted, but for many good reasons drove forward, having new-primed our arms. As we approached the place where they had been, I observed many small lights flying up in the air to an immense height; upon enquiry, the Cossacks told me, that these were signals to their comrades, to let them know that we were on the road, and presently we observed at a small distance six men, three on each side of the road. I thought that they were within gunshot, but the Cossacks advised us not to fire at them, for fear of alarming their companions; whereupon, we drove as fast as the horses were able to gallop. We at last arrived on the top of a high mountain, less than half a mile from Michaelkom, in all safety.

The people in that town having been alarmed, only kept us at the port for some time, till they were assured we were friends, and the next day we reached Kotchatoff, on the 23d of December.

After

After deducting the time I spent at Tula and Taverhoff, I was only 34 days in travelling from St Petersburg to Kotchatoff, which amounts to 2103 versts, although heavy loaded, which was upwards of 64 versts *per* day. I can give no right description of this country, as it was all covered over with snow; but was told, that it was very fruitful, and certainly, in time of peace, it is an agreeable country. It is distant about 30 English miles north from Asoph. Kotchatoff is in 47 degrees 8 minutes north latitude, and in 60 degrees east longitude, distant from Taverhoff, by the road on the Don, 930 versts. It is but a small village. The Prince had three barks, with some cannon, ammunition, and materials for cutting of wood to build vessels for navigating the Palus Mœotis against the Turks; but of this I shall say more hereafter. Upon visiting the places on the Don, none was found so proper as the Icorits; wherefore, we only remained after my arrival in Kotchatoff till the 5th of January 1738.

However, before I proceed, in my return, I must again acquaint the reader, that about that time, or very soon after our departure, the Cossacks, who had been employed in Cuban, returned, after having destroyed that open country, and carried off much plunder, many prisoners, flocks, and cattle. It seems the Turkish Tartars hovered about, and I believe

lieve were the same who put us in a fright, when on our return. The Cossacks, as I said, returning flushed with victory, and loaded with plunder, (no doubt had notice with what barbarity the Tartars had acted upon the Don) met them in the woods not far from the ruins of the burnt villages. They took their measures so well, and hemmed them in so effectually, that they cut 4000 of them in pieces, and recovered all their own cattle, and living Cossacks, with all the other valuable things in their possession.

The Cossacks were so much enraged at the unheard of cruelty, that the Turks had exercised upon the Cossack prisoners, that they would neither let the dead bodies be buried, nor throw them into the Don, but cast them into two heaps, 2000 to each. The armies, fleet, and Cossacks through the whole Ukraine paid dearly for this; for as the hot weather came on, the dead bodies putrified; and I was told by some officers, who passed by them, that they were obliged to make a circuit of about six miles distance, and yet the smell was most offensive: In short, the plague this summer 1738, raged most dreadfully, and if it did not take its rise altogether, from these heaps of dead, certainly it was increased by them.

C H A P. XXXVII.

Our return to Taverhoff by the river Don.

HAVING, as I said, received orders from the admiralty to return to Taverhoff, we set out from Kotchatoff, (leaving a small guard for the barks and implements of war, with orders to proceed for Asoph with the first thaw) on the 5th January 1738, by another road much nearer than by the Don. As we were sometimes obliged, notwithstanding the severity of the frost, to take up our lodgings in woods, under the canopy of heaven alone; I shall only mention a few of the more remarkable towns on the banks of the Don and Oskol, till we again arrived at Ribna upon the river Soina, almost where its streams join the Don. All these rivers empty themselves into the Don.

In so doing, I shall observe the same order I have hitherto done. From Kotchatoff to Kundrutze town on the Don, are 53 versts, to Burstra 16, to Kamennoi 86, to Gundrosske 45, to Lugan 84, to Krasnaianske 50, to Jamepol 61, to Rareoff, Borissos on the Oskol 47, to Senkoff 56, to Asnoska 10, to Kamenka 47, to Valviki 36, to Obzunske on the Soina 84, to Ribna 18, to Chovorotak on the Don 50, to Taverhoff 53.

By

By this road, we measured 776 versts betwixt Kotchatoff and Taverhoff, so that it measures less than the road on the Don by 156 versts.

It is proper, however, to observe that the Don and Oskol rivers run through the very middle of Little Tartary; that though the towns are generally pretty well fortified, and have numerous inhabitants, yet the distances betwixt them are very great, quite uninhabited, and either desert, or full of great woods; for which reasons, it is much exposed in time of war, to the depredations of flying parties of Crim Tartars, who commonly lie in wait upon the side of the woods, ready to fall upon passengers, when but few in number.

Our commander, Prince Gallitzin having every thing in readiness, set out from Kotchatoff about four o'clock in the morning, with great secrecy; for the enemy never could learn what was the number of men he commanded: and as he caused fire a morning and an evening gun, as Vice Admiral and Cenator, they imagined his command must have been very considerable. He likewise took the precaution of keeping a very strict guard about the town with great judgment.

He allowed none, whether soldiers, sailors, or inhabitants, to go out of the town under pain of death. But in truth, it was quite the

the contrary, for it is said, and he did not hesitate to say so also, that the Lords of the Admiralty planned out, and sent him this route, on purpose that he might have been cut off.

His eldest brother, Prince Demitry, a Senator, one of the wisest men at the helm of affairs, was, in the year 1736, for speaking his mind too freely, shut up during the remaining part of his life in the castle of Slusfelburgh, and all the Golitzin family were banished, some of them degraded: To which the Empress Anne, the daughter of Ivan or John, chearfully acceded: For the Golitzins are blood relations of Peter the Great, and had it not been for them, and the Nanshkins, the Princess Sophy would have murdered Peter.

Our commander had been for many years before, grand-treasurer to the admiralty: It seems formerly, when the lords of the admiralty happened to be in want of money, they made free to borrow from the treasurer: But, during the whole time of Prince Golitzin's management, they never could get a farthing; consequently, they were glad to be rid of him. These are said to be the reasons that they ordered him upon the Don, in such perilous times, with a command not exceeding 200 officers and servants included: Add to this, that he was ordered from St Peterburgh the same night, on which his brother was arrested,

X

rested, nor could he have one day allowed him to put his affairs in order, and upon his leaving St Petersburg, the admiralty was, during four months, closely employed in examining his books, to see if they could possibly find any fault, that they might get his life and estate. All these schemes failing, and people talking with great freedom of their barbarous usage of the Prince, and reports having been long received in St Petersburg from the officers, and an engineer under the Prince's command, that no place was found more convenient to build small vessels than Icorits, distant about 70 versts from Taverhoff, nearer Azoph: Accordingly, he was at last ordered to return as I have said.

His enemies not doubting, and seeing all their schemes had proved abortive, but some blunder would happen to him in the confusion of a command of about 3000 soldiers and sailors, and 30,000 peasants.

We arrived at Kundritze town on the Don, about mid-day. It was here I had the first opportunity of seeing with what respect these people received Russian grandees, and truly, I must say, that it was next to adoration: I was informed however, that the Cossacks esteemed the Golitzin family preferable to any in the whole Empire, and were well acquainted with the cloud which hovered over it. It is something remarkable that through all

all Little Tartary, they paid as great respect to this good, old, noble general, as if he had had the power of life and death. They brought him many presents, but he frankly told them, that as he stood in need of no presents, he consequently would accept of none, but would not refuse some victuals; because he knew they would not permit him to buy, and he could get them no other way, and indeed, his sledges were loaded with provisions, that he might stand in no need by the way. Not satisfied with having regaled the Prince and his officers plentifully, they did not forget his men, whereby, that very evening, I was involved in a good deal of trouble, attended with the most exquisite anxiety.

At our arrival, the Cossacks sent off some of their men armed, to give the next town notice of the Prince's arrival, and to warn them to have a sufficient number of fresh horses ready upon his arrival, that he might not be hindered in the least to proceed with all the expedition he pleased: Accordingly, having refreshed ourselves about two hours, we set out betwixt two and three of the clock P. M. and had scarcely reached a mile till we were alarmed with an irregular firing of cannon at the last town. Some of our convoy, (for they sent as many armed Cossacks, as they could spare, from one town to the next,

next, and this practice they continued thro' our route, till we arrived at Taverhoff) begged leave of the Prince, to return to defend their own town, not doubting that the Tartars had made an attack upon it.

The Prince very readily allowed as many to go as pleased, but the greater part staid with us. We had proceeded about two versts after this, mending our pace for fear of the Tartars, when our adjutant came to me, and told me that one of the medicine chests with the men belonging to it were not come forward, and that if it was lost, I would be charged with it. I not knowing at this time, the truth of his assertion, returned accordingly, my mate and Mr Bowman, whole chest it properly was, accompanied me, tho' I entreated him to stay by the command, alledging that it was quite needless for us both to run the risque of being either killed, or taken prisoners by these barbarians : But he was as much afraid of losing the medicines as I was, and indeed it was more his charge, as I had not received them from him. We had not drove back two versts, when a Cossack on horseback discovered the people we wanted, in a finall valley, a little way from the right road. It seems, they had been making too free with their bottle, while in Kundrutze, and being quite stupid with liquor, they lost their road, and with all the tranquillity imaginable, had lain down on
the

the snow and fell fast asleep, notwithstanding the great frost, and noise the cannon made hard by them.

Mr Bowman very soon brought them to their senses with a severe whipping, and ordered them to drive on before us, as fast as the horses could gallop. We did not overtake the Prince till we arrived at Buistra : The Cossacks who had returned to Kundrutze overtook us, and told that all was well in their town ; that the magistrates having neglected to pay their compliments to the Prince with their cannon, at his arrival in their town, they thought it their duty to do such a piece of necessary ceremony at his departure ; and that this was the cause of our alarm. It was a custom, and I believe a law, that when any flag or general officer approached any cities or towns of note, which had cannon mounted, to salute him with more or less cannon, according to his rank in the army or fleet ; but I do not believe the Cossacks were subjected to this, because they bought all their own ammunition ; whereas in Russia, the powder and all other ammunition belongs to the Empress. I was informed that when the Prince received this information, that he sent orders to all the towns through which he was to pass, to keep their powder for the safety of their towns, acquainting them, that the ceremony was very disagreeable to him, and not only unnecessary and expensive

expensive to them; but exposed them in time of war to the danger of want of powder, when they might have much more occasion for it: Especially, as he was well informed that parties of the enemy were hovering about, who would be glad to find them unprepared. After this, nothing uncommon happened till we arrived at Gundrofske: Betwixt this last town and Lugan are computed 84 versts; consequently no horses could carry us through, without rest and food. About 30 versts distant from Gundrofske is a small village, where we halted to refresh ourselves and cattle in the day time. After we had given our horses two or three hours feeding, we set out in the afternoon, but before we had travelled 20 versts, night came on, and we were still forced to proceed 20 versts further, till we arrived in a very great wood, where we had fires made in many places, to get our food warmed, and also, as it was extreme hard frost, to soften the air. The horses which were yoked before the medicines, &c. were quite tired, so that I arrived later than any of our men.

At our arrival, my appetite was very keen, but I had nothing to eat, except a piece of very good roasted beef frozen quite hard, my bread was in the same condition. Stephen, my only help-mate, and I, with no small trouble thawed our victuals before the fire, then scraped off a little and eat it, as I
was

was very tired, I desired Stephen to bring my bed, and lay it down upon the snow, upon which, I stretched myself a short while, with my feet to the fire, and left Stephen to heat, scrape, and eat as much as he pleased.

The Prince, when obliged to take up his abode in the fields, trusted none of his officers, but was wont to go round his men, and see that the centinels were alert, and the rest in good order. As he was thus employed, he found me on my bed, and Stephen very busy eating. He asked if I was well? I instantly rose, but Stephen told him every thing which had happened; he took me by the hand, and desired me to go with him, I obeyed, we went together to another fire, where his officers were busy eating some exceeding good fish soup very warm. He ordered to give me a spoon; which I exercised well, and got also a few glasses of excellent wine. He spoke to me frequently: But I believe he could only guess at my answers; so much kindness I could observe, fretted not a little his adjutant, and indeed, as he used too great freedom with the Prince, I thought he said that probably I would not in time deserve so much kindness, at which I am certain the Prince was very angry. Having eat and drunk heartily, I paid my compliments to the Prince, and his officers, except the adjutant, of whom I have ever retained a bad opinion.

Before

Before day-light, the whole command was in motion. My people, having been very tired the night before, were not so soon ready as the others, which was lucky for the Prince. It seems the Cossacks upon watch had given information, that, as they heard a noise among the trees, they suspected the enemy had discovered us. This report soon spread, and he was best off who could get soonest away. Our horses, as I said before, were heavy loaded, and probably not so good as the rest; wherefore, we were obliged to march on slowly. We had not drove many versts from the wood, when we observed a chest, which, though not large, I suspected might contain the Prince's plate, on account of its weight. Day now began to appear.

We travelled on till we were within three or four versts of Liegon, the country free of woods, and the sun shining bright, when our heroic adjutant, Balotnicoff, (for that was his name,) appeared with a guard of four soldiers, and, with a loud voice, and a very haughty air, asked If we had seen a chest? Stephen answered in the affirmative, and, pointing, told him, it was lying a-cross my sledge, and said, that I would carry it to the Prince. Balotnicoff put on such airs, that I resolved to let him know that I was determined not to bear his impertinence: But he, mistaking the gentle answers I gave him by my soldier, as if caused through fear of him, alighted from his

his

his horse, came forward with his soldiers to take the chest *per force*. Upon which, I took up a carrabine which lay by me, laid it on my knee, as if ready for any thing, and ordered my men to drive on. The gallant Batloznicoff and his soldiers mounted their horses, and rode off, threatening me no doubt. In short, we arrived but a little after him, when I was conducted with the chest to the Prince. A noise soon ensued. I desired Stephen to inform the Prince, that I found the chest, and suspected it was his silver plate: That, as I was a stranger, had I parted with it, and if any thing had been lost, I might have most innocently suffered in character at least: That what was in it I knew not, but was certain nothing was lost since it was in my possession. I said, (for the adjutant had been complaining grievously, as if I had threatened to shoot him,) that it was very true I had laid my carrabine on my knee, the manner in which I frequently travelled, but did not threaten him, tho' I was uncertain what might have happened, had he offered force: That I was determined to be as obliging to all the officers, and all men, as lay in my power: That I never would designedly affront or disoblige any of them; but, at same time, I was every whit as unwilling to take affronts: That, by my instructions from the College of Medicine, I was ordered to be under his Excellency's orders; and that I should receive orders from no other, unless o-

therways directed by the Medicine Chancery. At this the Prince seemed very well pleased.

The tables were turned. Balotnicoff imagined that I would be at once disgraced ; but this day began a mutual kindness betwixt this good Prince and me, which continued ever after. He happened to ask me, How I came so soon to be acquainted with Russian vocables ? for, tho' I could not keep up conversation in the Russian language, I had learned many vocables. I told him, and produced a vocabulary in Latin and Russ ; at this he expressed great satisfaction in Latin ; but after this, even after I had made great progress in understanding and promptly speaking the Russian language, he spoke with me seldom in any other language than Latin.

He now gave me, not only a general invitation to his table, but enforced it as my duty, during the rest of our journey to Taverhoff, and ordered me always to sit near himself for the conveniency of discourse. This was a terrible blow to Balotnicoff. I thought he would have burst with insignificant malice. By this means the Prince came to be made acquainted with Captain Carrabine's dispute, and his reasons for sending me, so much contrary to common sense, and the interest of the sick in Taverhoff, as Mr Burman was unable to attend them.

After

After this I keenly cultivated the love of all the officers, except Balotnicoff, whom I avowedly despised ; and indeed, he at last was ridiculed and despised by the whole command. He was a gentleman by birth, but poor, had no education, and therefore was made a cooper to the fleet by Peter the Great. His case had been, two years by past, represented to the Prince, who, by his interest, got him made a midshipman, which is of equal rank to lieutenant in the army.

We now travelled on, without any thing remarkable happening, till we arrived at Senkoff on the river Askol. The weather here had been mild, and during the winter but little snow, which, by the influence of the sun, was fast melting, so that in many places there was none. We here propos'd to sell our sledges, and take to carts, but the Cossacks would give nothing for them worth our acceptance. They also informed us, that, further on, we would have very deep snow. Upon this the Prince ordered us to lash our sledges upon carts, which the Cossacks procured, with an additional number of horses. Thus equipped, we marched on, not so much afraid of the Tartars as formerly.

We for many miles passed over little hills and large vallies. After refreshing ourselves and horses at a wood in the night-time, we proceeded, and in the morning went up by a very easy ascent of some versts, a rising ground,

ground, from the top of which we discovered, at about four or five versts distance, the beautiful town called Kamenka, situated in the middle of a very extensive plain, upon the banks of the Askol; the descent from this height was very steep. The Prince was foremost, our engineer immediately before me, and three writers in a sledge mounted on a cart, were a considerable way behind me. We had proceeded but a little way down the hill, when I was alarmed with an excessive noise from the writers cart. Looking about, I saw that their horse had taken fright, and was galloping directly upon me. My driver could but only clear the way, when they passed my wheels very near, and, their driver having fallen from his seat, their horse overturned the engineer's cart and horse, whereby it was all broke to pieces.

It affected me much to see at once three writers and our engineer lying motionless on the ground. I went to them, and, upon enquiry, found that they were only extremely frightened; but the engineer lay still on the ground like another Hercules, as he was a remarkably big man. He could not speak, but groaned. I caused Mr Bowman bleed him instantly, put him into my cart, and drove on to Kamenka, where every thing was done for his recovery, agreeable to the art of surgery. He recovered very well, nor did he ever forget my care, and my readily yielding
my

my cart to him, gained me good will from the whole command: And the good Prince returned me thanks publicly, for what I would, in the like circumstances, have done to my enemy, as I told them.

We met with nothing worth relating after this, till we arrived in Taverhoff, but I must acquaint the reader, that the city of Ribna is the most beautiful I saw in the Ukraine. It is large, and has six or seven churches. The last day of our travels was a continued thaw, which obliged me to walk on foot more than 10 versts. At last, about eight o'clock at night, I arrived on the 15th of January, having travelled 776 versts in ten days.

C H A P. XXXVIII.

What happened after my Arrival in Taverhoff, &c.

NOT being able to get lodgings, though fatigued and wet, I went to the Prince, with whom were many officers, and my old acquaintance Captain Carrabine among the rest.

The Prince no sooner saw me, than, having been informed of the cause of my delay, he ordered Carrabine to give me a lodging with Mr Burman the surgeon; and, at same time, made enquiry at him about the reason

son

son of sending me to Kotchatoff, when he was well assured, that he (the Prince) was soon to return to Taverhoff; How he durst demand medicines, which he knew were destined for another command? &c. In short, the Prince spoke a long while concerning his undue attention to the Empress's interest, and, consequently, his acting contrary to the Imperial mandate; his design to mislead a stranger, and lastly, his want of humanity, in sending a young man, who knew nothing of the roads, and could not speak the language, threatening to take his soldier from him, who was granted by the admiralty, into a country, not only bordering on, but daily skirmishing, with the enemy.

He also observed, that Captain Carrabine was an old officer, consequently the more culpable, and that, in short, he did not know how he could dispense with passing unnoticed such very gross faults. Here he ended his discourse, and, immediately after, a piece of Russian humiliation began, which I had never seen before. The poor captain fell on his knees, confessed that all was true that the Prince had said, put him in mind that he was a gentleman, and lastly, begged, for Christ's sake, that he would pardon him this time, assuring him, that he never would again give cause for the like reproof. Thus Carrabine's high spirit was brought low, to the most pitiful degree.

The

The Russians are strongly attached to their religion and customs. If a crime is any way pardonable, the delinquent will scarcely miss the answer of his supplication, if he asks it for the sake of Christ, St Nicolas, the Emperor, or Empress. Prince Golitzin could not stand out against this submissive way of asking, and his sake for whom he asked it. He did not let him remain long on his knees, but took him up, embraced, and pardoned him sincerely, I believe, what he had acted contrary to himself; observing, that I had it in my power to represent whatever difficulties I might meet with, to the Medicine-chancery, the members of which, usually, as he well knew, having always access to the Empress, made but very little difficulty, not only of representing their affairs to all the superior colleges, but effectually to enforce justice to be done to their dependents. He told him, that he had received a letter from his good friend Dr Fisher, the archiater, (in answer to one he had wrote him, intreating him to send a well qualified surgeon, to take care of him and his command) in which he assured him, it was his opinion, that the Prince would thank him for the man he had sent, altho' he was then ignorant of the language, that he doubted not, when he was absent from his countrymen, that he would soon learn the Russian language. He said a great deal more, which I shall not here repeat.

Captain

Captain Carrabine knew that every word the Prince had said was true; therefore desired in English, that I would forget any thing he had acted disagreeable to me. I took him by the hand, gave him a hearty shake, and assured him, that, if ever an opportunity offered, in which I could be of service to him, he would experience my sincere readiness to oblige him. Thus ended this important affair.

Captain Hertenbergh, a Dane, Lieutenants Every, Smallman and Luggar, Englishmen, came and welcomed me to Taverhoff. They had been upon the Asophian sea, or Palus Mœotis, last summer, and were ordered, with 5 or 600 sailors, to come to Taverhoff, and had arrived there, whilst I was in my way to Kotchatoff. It is easy to any one, who has been some months without seeing a countryman, to imagine how glad I was, so unexpectedly, to meet them. I forgot that I was tired, and, at Captain Hertenbergh's invitation, we went to his house, and enjoyed ourselves very agreeably till bed-time. Captain Hertenbergh had learned the theory and practice of navigation in England, and indeed showed me as much kindness as my countrymen, or any other could do. Two days after this, Captain Hertenbergh came to my lodging, before I was out of bed, and observing, that I slept on my bed laced upon chairs, asked the reason of this. I told him, that Mr
Burman

Burman had no spare bedstead but one, and that a surgeon, who was in possession of it before I arrived, was troubled with the itch, a disease I did not like ; and that, if the summer was once set in, I would sleep in a tent. The captain waited till I had dressed myself, and invited me to breakfast with him. He then let me see a small room he had next his bed-chamber, and a separate door by which I could go in or come out at pleasure, without disturbing him. He said, if I would accept of it, it would be so far from being inconvenient to him, that he would take it very kindly, and think himself obliged. I had no objection to his offer, and, in an instant, my bed and all my baggage was transported to Captain Hertzenbergh's house.

I shall just mention two or three anecdotes which happened this summer, and then proceed to more interesting subjects. These officers were ordered here to assist the Prince in getting vessels ready against the summer, which was fast advancing. The Prince issued out orders to the governors of Veronits, Casan, and Kiove, to send, without loss of time, their complement of peasants, to cut down timber in the neighbouring woods, to carry it to Taverhoff and Icorits. No less than 30,000 peasants were employed. It may appear to every one very ridiculous to cause vessels of 60 or 70 tons burden to be built with new felled timber ; but how ridiculous

foever such orders may appear to an intelligent reader, it was really fact; and it is incredible, with what expedition a number of these vessels were got ready against May and the beginning of June, and were carried to Asoph with the swelling of the Don, which always happens about this time, from the melting of the snow covering such immense tracts of land.

The consequence was, that the sailors had enough a-do to keep them swimming. In short, they were obliged to cork the seams every day during summer; and, though we were most successful against the Turks by land, we were as unsuccessful by sea: For, whereas we could send to the Asophian sea only such vessels as these, capable to carry four or five, or at most six small cannon, the Palus Mœotis was covered with large Turkish vessels carrying 60 or 70 great cannon; and it was confidently reported, that these vessels were directed by French masters and gunners. In short, these vessels frequently fell into the hands of the Turks. The reader probably will ask, To what service such vessels could be useful? The design of them was only to transport ammunition and provisions for the army under the orders of the late Field Marshal Count Lacy, which sometimes they effected, but never returned all to Asoph in safety.

Another fleet of this kind was destined for the army, under the command of Count Muinich, who

who acted on the west side of the Dneiper; but indeed neither was of great use, as will appear, when I relate the progress of our arms against the Turks.

Mr Smallman was a good natured quiet person, and, I believe, would not willingly have quarrelled with any man. He had been, since the year 1736, miserably reduced by the obstinacy of a disease, and though he had been under the care of eminent men; yet, as he was obliged every summer to sail into the Palus Mœotis, before his arrival in Taverhoff, he was again in a worse condition than before he set out. I had this winter cured him. He was but recovered, and in a very weak state, when the rest of our countrymen were ordered, with all their men, to repair to Asoph; but Smallman was kept by my attestation, declaring, that, till he recovered strength, he could do no duty: That at present he was unable to perform such a journey, and that it would risk his life to no purpose. This, I afterwards was informed, was very disagreeable to the haughty Bredal, their insignificant admiral, as will be related.

One day as we were in the citadel of Taverhoff, a brother lieutenant of his in the fleet, enquired of Smallman, Where he learned the first rudiments of navigation? Smallman answered, That he was bound apprentice to the coal-ships which ply betwixt Newcastle and London, and afterwards served in the royal navy.

navy. Mr Paveloff, for that was the other lieutenant's name, wanted no more than to turn this into ridicule, and indeed was bearing hard upon Mr Smallman, when I said, that I was no sailer, but that I had heard it often asserted by the most knowing people in these affairs in Great Britain, that sailors bred in the coal-trade were esteemed the best and hardiest, possibly in the world; and that certainly the Russian admiralty knew this well, else they never would have engaged Mr Smallman in the Imperial service. In short, Paveloff answered, that as I was no sailer, he did not direct his discourse to me, and only wanted to talk with Smallman.

Mr Paveloff was very rich, vain, proud, and overbearing; and I observed that he wanted to make Mr Smallman a butt to his vanity. It went to my heart to be present, and see a good natured countryman made the game of a vain empty fellow (for Scots, English, and Irish, are all countrymen abroad.) I begged of Mr Smallman, as he loved his country, his countrymen present, and his honour, to suffer him no longer, to call him aside, and let him know, that he would have him either to ask pardon immediately, or else to assure him, that he would take the first opportunity of doing himself justice; and, if needful, I assured him, he should not want a second. Smallman did so, and the consequence was, Paveloff asked pardon,

don, which effectually turned a great laugh against him, even by his countrymen. He suspected that I was the cause, (I spoke in English) and as I was but of small growth, young, and had, at that time, more the appearance of a consumptive person than any thing else, as I was exercising myself in a very immoderate fit of laughter, he, unexpectedly enough, collared me, and, without great difficulty, I believe as in jest however, threw me on the ground: I had also got fast hold of him, and held so fast, that he fell over me down the side of the hill, (for it was a rising ground where this happened, and we were on the very top; at the bottom of which were some old docks, where Peter the Great used to launch his new built vessels:) I had no intention to stop the diversion, nor was I in the smallest degree angry, especially as I was dressed in an ordinary green frock, and he in his uniform, richly mounted with broad gold lace; so I very nimbly flew over him, but, still holding fast, tho' he would have been disengaged, I brought him again over me, and thus we tumbled down to the dock, where we were both bedaubed from head to foot. At rising, as we were out of hearing of the by-standers, I assured him, that I looked upon him as a scoundrel, and would embrace the very first safe opportunity of chastising him as such. However, tho' his cloaths were not only rendered useless with nastiness, but in many places

places torn, yet he affected to treat all that had happened as a joke, and took his friends to witness, it could be nothing else. By their interposition then, a reconciliation was made, and, to confirm it, he entertained us with a few bottles of wine. Indeed, thro' the whole farce, I had enough a-do to look any way serious, frequently bursting out into involuntary laughs.

Soon after the departure of our countrymen, Captain Carrabine was dismissed to St Petersburg, and one Captain Ruselius, a German, appointed as captain of the port in his place.

C H A P. XXXIX.

Concerning what happened to the Author by Admiral Bredal, &c.

IN the month of February, Bredal arrived in Veronits, and sent word to the captain of the port to provide him a lodging in Taverhoff. Ruselius ordered me to evacuate my quarters. Capt. Hertenbergh not only had left me his house, but a very considerable quantity of wood for fuel, which Bredal would have undoubtedly burnt. I, considering myself as not under the directions of the port, returned however my compliments to the captain, who was truly a good man.

Instead

Instead of obeying his orders, I desired my servant to yoke my horse in the sledge: While he was doing this, I secured, by barring and locking, all the entries into this great house, and then drove into the desert for an airing, where I remained long enough to give Rufelius and his admiral time to adjust their affairs, and, when late, returned to Mr Burman, dismissed my servant to go home to take care of the house. At Mr Burman's I was told by the admiral's surgeon, that the admiral was very angry that I stopped Smallman, and that he was determined to have a second visitation, in order to carry him along with him: That I had now again incurred his displeasure, by not evacuating the house, according to Rufelius's order; and that, as he had great need of men of my profession, he had heard him say, he would require me by an unanswerable memorial to Prince Golitzin, shewing him his case, and the impossibility of being provided any other way; whereas the Prince had many chances of surgeons, passing either to the fleet or armies.

In answer to this, especially as I knew this surgeon was to sup with Bredal that night, I told him, that Mr Rufelius and I, I hoped, would not disagree about my leaving the house, when he was sensible of the cause: That Mr Burman and I jointly had attested Smallman, and that if Bredal, after such attestation,

testation, took him, though warranted by the attestation of others, I would immediately lodge in the Medicine Chancery a protest, and another in the admiralty, in the strongest terms. I said that my instructions from the Medicine Chancery, and corroborated by instructions from the board of admiralty, who, he ought to know, never attempted to contradict the design of the Chancery in medical affairs, bore that I should with all possible expedition make my repair to Prince Golitzin, and there to take care of his health, and of those under his immediate command.

I said, I was surprised that any vice-admiral was so thoughtless as to imagine any person, who had the smallest title to common sense, would run the risk of disobeying instructions from his principal constituents, in favours of a man absolutely under their orders, and of a person, of whom he knows nothing. That I should not hesitate to speak the same language, and something more to the admiral, if he urged any such matter; and, in short, tho' Prince Golitzin was ever so willing to oblige Admiral Bredal, in this I would obey neither the one nor the other, till they procured me new orders from the Medicine Chancery.

As I said before, a dark cloud hovered over the Prince, and this made him, tho' naturally a quiet good man, submit to many liberties, which men, in no shape equal to him,

at this time frequently took. I was certain that what I had said would be agreeable to the Prince, especially as I took the blame of refusal to myself; the two German surgeons stared at my reasoning, acknowledged the truth of our being only under the direction of the Medicine Chancery, but said that the admiral, was he to hear such discourse, might do me a great injury; because at such distance, his power was very great, and his connections with the admiralty and Medicine Chancery might be also great. That he was, they had reason to believe, also a very invective man, and that people greatly superior to me in rank, durst not take the liberty to withstand his orders, though not strictly agreeable to the regulations.

I only replied, that I was born in a land of liberty, and was resolved to speak the language of my heart; and that so long as I did my duty to her Majesty, and was determined to act up to the meaning of the regulations, to which I was strictly bound by my oath; therefore I was certain that no admiral could greatly molest me, if I continued to pursue this way. I said much more which I shall not, for brevity's sake, mention; but, as I expected, and indeed, designed, the admiral's surgeon at supper told him every word, and probably more. The auditory expressed great surprize, as they said, at my impudence: But the admiral, tho' a Dane,

had been long on board British men of war, where he learned his principles of navigation, and likewise, the lengths that British people will go, when hardly used, said nothing but bit his lips, and his acquaintances said it was a sign of displeasure. Next morning I waited upon my Prince, who seemed to be disturbed: He told me that Bredal, for whom he had not the smallest regard, had insisted to take me with him, &c. I in return, acquainted him of our discourse last night, and of my reasons for saying that I would not go even if the Prince ordered me. As none were present, he said, I had told what was true, and, in some rapture, threw his morning gown about me, which was a sign of great satisfaction. He however ordered that I should make my appearance before Bredal, and advised, that I might moderate my passion; because it might, some time or other, lie in his power to do me an injury. I accordingly went into a great hall where the admiral was standing with a number of his minions about him: As I was very neatly dressed, he eyed me: Capt. Russelius told him who I was, and as an answer, he gave a nod. I remained about a quarter of an hour speaking to my acquaintances: At last, I made my bow, and went off, not ill pleased that I had no opportunity of making a wider breach, and when I consider the important air, and pride which he clumsily enough assumed,

assumed, I imagine he was as glad to be quit of me.

As this haughty man was determined to carry some of his proposals against such a diminutive antagonist as me, and as it was the only one remaining, orders were issued to re-visit Mr Smallman, and his own surgeon was to be one of the judges. I shall not here take up my reader's time, nor tire his patience about medical controversies in this affair, against the admiral and his surgeon only, that I assured him, he dishonoured his place in the Empress's service, either in acting according as Bredal would have him, or else, he evidently betrayed his ignorance, in alledging it was safe and possible for a man to do what he was truly not able to perform, or that he run no risque of his life, to make a journey of betwixt 7 and 800 versets, at such a season, considering the dangerous course he had just undergone, and the present feeble and weak condition he was brought to. I told him, it was not enough for him to think to get protection from such a head as his admiral's: He ought to be sure, that he acted according to principles of the medical institutions agreed upon by the best masters, and particularly, according to the faithful observations of the most honourable authors in the profession; that a deliberate action against the truths they asserted, was an acknowledgement of ignorance. I said, I was acquainted
with

with the Archiator, and that he knew me; that I durst say, Mr Burman was a man of more integrity and experience than to join with him: But that supposing he should, it would rather stimulate, than discourage me to represent the affair more effectually; and that if Mr Smallman should lose his life after such fair admonition, he and his admiral was most justly answerable to her Majesty, for such an indirect step, contrary to the tenure of Peter the Great's regulations, and that I would immediately lay my complaint before the Cantoir in Taverhoff, enjoining them to acquaint his admiral with it, before he left Taverhoff, that he might not plead ignorance; that lastly, the Empress had too great a love for justice, to let such crimes escape punishment; a surprising privilege truly, allowed to great men and judges, thro' many principalities in Europe! Wherever this happens to be the case, who can help thinking, if they dare not speak their minds, that such a state is ruled by madmen, or absolute fools! I shall, for instance, suppose that a man obnoxious to a great man, had inadvertently in anger, threatened another, this other afterwards happened to come to an untimely death, by an unknown hand; the man, who formerly had inadvertently threatened him, was seized, thrown into jail, tried and condemned to be hanged, and positively was hanged, only by the power of a
great

great man of neither honour, honesty, nor real good judgment: And such a case has been discovered afterwards by the very author of the murder, either from a disturbed conscience, or from a desire before he left this world to do justice to the relations of the person, who had innocently been led to the altar as the victim of a wrong-headed great man.

In short, my former declaration concerning Mr Smallman, was a second time confirmed by the admiral's own surgeon, tho' very contrary to his inclination: But the fear of being exposed, tried and degraded, preponderated with him for once to desert the warm injunctions of his empty headed admiral, and indeed, I did not part with him, till he was sensible enough of the poor pitiful opinion I entertained of his admiral and himself, which was, in a very short time after this, fully evidenced to be very well founded, as will be faithfully related in its proper place. His surgeon advised me to go along with him and Mr Burman to deliver our report: This I declined for many reasons. Thus we parted, nor did I ever see either of them after this, so that what I have wrote cannot be referred to any other motive, than a natural antipathy I ever had, and continue to bear against all such base men; nor did I ever hesitate to declare my opinion either to
 them

them or their friends, let their greatness be ever so extensive.

CHAP. XL.

A geographical description of the province of Veronits, its capital, and a natural history of this country.

THE metropolis of the province of Veronits bears the same name, and lies almost south-south-east from the city of Moscow, distant from Taverhoff 10 versts. The city of Veronits is built upon the south side of a hill, and the river Veronits washes the south side of the city. Upon the top of the hill is a citadel surrounded with a dry ditch, fortified with palisadoes, it is a place of no great strength: In it, the archbishop has his palace, and there are some churches. The whole city is encompassed with a dry ditch and rampart with palisadoes. It is said to contain about 6000 inhabitants: The governor's palace and courts of justice are all built at the foot of the hill*. The province of

* At a distance from the city, especially to the south upon many hills and high grounds, the inhabitants, in former times; probably before the Ukraine was peopled, formed rickles of stones, or cones of earth where centinels were placed with tar barrels or other combustibles, to give notice to the cities and countries of the approach of the

of Veronits has the province of Moscow on the north. Bielogorod and Kiove provinces on the west; Little Tartary on the south; Penzinskoi, Simbirskoi and part of the kingdom of Astrachan on the east. In 47 degrees 10 minutes north latitude on the south, by 63 degrees 45 minutes east longitude, on the east by 54 degrees three minutes, on the north, and by 54 degrees 10 minutes east longitude on the west. A great part of the Ukraine is subject to the provinces of Veronits and Kiove. The province of Veronits is very justly reckoned a natural, rich and fertile country, there are indeed many great deserts in it, only from want of water, for on brooks and rivers are many very large and populous cities and villages; excepting its southermost borders in Little Tartary on the Don, which, though a rich pleasant country, does not seem to be well inhabited: This proceeds, I suspect from their fear of the Crim Tartars; for, unless a colony of warlike men forms and fortifies a town at once, there can be no safety for a few inhabiting the open country, as no manner of trust is to be put in the Crim Tartars, nor indeed in their protectors, the Turks. Taverhoff lies south
west

the enemy. These are still remaining, as with us in Scotland, and I was informed, that in suspicious times, two horsemen were appointed by each of these, who, when they perceived any considerable body of men travelling from the enemy's country, immediately set fire to the combustibles, and made their repair to places of strength.

west from the city Veronits, built by Peter the Great on the south banks of the river Veronits, which runs into the Don at the distance of about two versts from Taverhoff. Two thirds of Taverhoff are surrounded by the rivers Don and Veronits. The low flat grounds are covered over with thick woods and lakes, after the floods of May and June are over, which, I presume, makes Taverhoff very unhealthy. About mid-way betwixt Veronits and Taverhoff, Peter made a long, strong, high dyke, with a lock in it, for confining the waters of Veronits, in order to float the ships he built there. He made another of the same materials, but much stronger and higher, upon the Don, three miles from Taverhoff. The dyke alone is more than two versts in length, and has two sluices in it; by the help of which great locks, it is almost incredible, what a depth of water he assembled, by which he launched ships of war of 70 guns, some of which I have seen still preserved in Taverhoff; and by this conflux of water, he carried these great ships to Asoph; which, when the last peace was made with the Turks, in his life time, were again, by the same care and art, brought back to Taverhoff, laid up on dry ground, and shades built over them, I suppose only to perpetuate the memory of that great Emperor.

Taverhoff is built very regularly, with the streets intersecting one another at right angles,
all

all of wood: A fine palace stands on the west end of the town, with good gardens, where the Prince lived, built of the same materials. The fort lies to the west of this, in which every thing necessary for ship-building, and magazines of all sorts, are kept. The citadel is made of earthen ramparts palisadoed, with bastions at the corners, (it being an exact square) mounted with cannon. To the west of this, is a village inhabited by 3000 soldiers, for the safety of the place. Taverhoff is inhabited only by sailors, and a few fishermen. I presume this policy is not bad, because the same spirit of envy takes place in Russia, as in many other nations, betwixt soldiers and sailors. They never can agree, for in St Petersburg, though under the immediate discipline of the supreme government, their animosity was so strong, that, in my time, the guards and sailors have fought, notwithstanding severe orders to the contrary, pitched battles, where some on both sides have been slain: At last, however, they were restrained from this by the Empress Anne.

Certainly the province of Veronits is one of the most plentiful countries in the world, comprehending great part of the Ukraine; for the numbers of our armies and fleet, altogether acting against the Turks, with an army for the protection of the Ukraine, were no less than 150,000; add to these 40 or 50,000 peasants employed in the different works of ship-building, all which were sup-

plied with provisions from the provinces of Veronits and Kiove, nor did I ever learn, that any provision was brought from any other province of Russia into this, during the whole war; yet, for all this, I have known an ox bought for a ruble; a large sow, killed and cleaned, for 3s. 6d. a goose or turkey 2d. or at most 3d. a hen 1d. and so forth. I have often bought a bag of oats, equal to four bushels Winchester measure, for about 3s. 6d. Large magazines of provisions, during the war, were kept in many fortified cities in this province, always in good order, so that the army, when on the Ukraine, never suffered the smallest want of any thing.

The desarts, when they are watered with a few showers of rain in the summer, produce grass in abundance. The banks of the rivers are like gardens, producing many vegetables, which we, with all our art, can scarcely cultivate in ours. Hops and Sparrowgrass grow luxuriantly every where; their apples are not good; pears, from which we have made, for a mere trifle, the best perry I ever tasted, grow wild; great variety of the medicinal plants, used in the apothecaries shops, grow only by the richness of the soil.

The rivers afford food and all convenience to different kinds of water-fowl, such as swans, different sorts of geese and ducks, snipes, &c. The desert produces heath-fowl of different kinds, bustards, cranes, partridges, quails,

quails, &c. Quadrupeds, harts, several sorts of deer, wild swine not very plentiful, hares, wolves, foxes, bears, and a very beautiful animal, called by the natives furks, which burrow under ground, and live far from any inhabited place, are of a brown colour, something like a lap-dog, but have large eyes and whiskers, and only four large teeth in the fore part of their mouths, are excessively fat, sit at or near their holes, and, when they see any man, whistle very loud two or three times, then retire. They live as it were in colonies, for they are always found in large bands. The rivers and lakes are full of very fine fish, such as sturgeon, stirlet, pike, tench, perch, carp, &c. In short, nothing is wanted to make Veronits the happiest country in the world, but liberty and mild government! What is in the bowels of the earth, I know not, for the inhabitants, having no need of any thing more than what nature has so plentifully provided for them, seek after nothing else.

C H A P. XLI.

Concerning the Russian and Turkish War, from the Year 1736, till the latter End of the Year 1739.

DURING the two years I staid in Taverhoff, I had many opportunities of being informed concerning the operations of our armies and fleets, by gentlemen who had been eye-witnesses. I shall, however, for brevity's sake, only give a general relation of what happened every summer, without entering into very many, though brave, petty actions. Mighty empires, it is well known, like children, quarrel, and agree again after they are tired. They are both in the right, and both in the wrong; as this is often the case, I shall not say whether the Russians or Turks were in the wrong, but so it was, war was declared by the Russians against the Turks and Tartars in 1736, and two armies were ordered to act immediately. The first set out under the command of the brave Count Mui-nich, who, without loss of time, laid siege to Asoph, where he lost a great number of brave men, nor could he take the city. Another army was getting ready by the wise, the humane, the brave Count Lacy. These two great men were both field-marsbals in the armies

mies of Russia. They were both great experienced generals, but their characters are different. Count Muinich was a German from Hessehumburg, an intrepid, bold man, but endeavoured to carry all his enterprises at once ; he therefore had no notion of sparing even his own men. Count Lacy, under whose immediate orders I served two years, was an Irish gentleman. He was at the siege of Limrick, and followed King James VII. to France : He served the Emperor of Germany, and at last the Empire of Russia : He was at the famous battle of Narva, and many have told me, that it was owing to that gentleman that the whole Russian army was not cut to pieces ; for he wisely destroyed the roads, so that the victorious Charles could not pass. The universal character he bore in the Russian army, by all ranks of men, joined to what I have said, is, that, when he commanded the army, he never fought a battle, but he was victorious ; he never laid siege to any place that he did take.

At the siege of Dantzick, they commanded by turns every week. After they had made 1500 French prisoners, it was determined in a council of war, to chastise the citizens for galling the Russians with their artillery from the walls, during their action with the French, who had taken protection under the walls of Dantzick. The marshals agreed that the citizens should be chastised, but they differed

differed far in the manner of attack. Count Muinich wanted to scale the walls instantly, despising such a nest of burghers ; but the wary Count Lacy was against this, on account of the great loss of men which must necessarily be the consequence, in so much that he protested against the council of war, and never would command with Muinich after this.

His advice was soon verified, for, although they soon made themselves masters of the city, it was with the loss of 15,000 men. Count Muinich, as I said before, had lost a great number of his best troops before Asoph, nor had he made the smallest impression on the city ; for these reasons, the Court of Petersburg ordered Count Lacy to take the command of Muinich's troops, and Muinich to march against the Pericop.

As Count Lacy was marching with the utmost expedition alongst the Don, escorted only by a few Cossacks and barbarous Kalmucks, part of the Kalmucks stole his horses, giving out that they were stolen by a party of the Crim Tartars. The marshal being in the desert, could not proceed, sent the remaining Kalmucks in quest of his horses, promising them their value if they were recovered. In short, his horses were returned quite fatigued, and the Kalmucks received their reward according to the marshal's promise ; but afterwards their villany was discovered, and they were glad to return the money to preserve their
lives.

lives. When Count Lacy had taken a view of the city, he caused new works to be made, and the artillery, especially the mortars, to be placed, so as to reach their great powder magazine; at same time he ordered two large praams to be stationed under the walls of the city. By this change of operations, the greatest powder magazine was blown up by a bomb, which, as was reported, destroyed at least one third of the city, upon which the Turks delivered it up, with the cannon, mortars, and ammunition remaining, but agreed to transport as many Turks as chused to go to the Crim, with their proper effects, and this he did with great exactness. Count Munich destroyed the Pericop, sent many prisoners to Petersburg*, and these operations concluded the campaign this year.

C H A P. XLII.

The Operations of the Armies in the Year 1737.

EARLY this summer, as General Leslie, a gentleman of Scots extraction, was, with a small body of men, passing from one part of the Ukraine to another, he was attacked by a large body of Tartars. It was said,

* The Russians had a small fleet in the Don, stationed to carry provisions and ammunition to the army under the command of Count Lacy at Asoph.

that he sent off expreffes immediately, to a German, Major-General Heim, at no great diftance, who, had he been willing, might eafily have relieved that brave man. General Leffie encouraged his men not to deliver themfelves up prifoners, but die like men; which accordingly happened. The Tartars got fome fpoil, but did not make one prifoner: Some alledged, that his fon was made prifoner, but if fo, he was certainly mortally wounded, for he was never heard of, and, had he been alive, the Tartars would have preferred him for ranfom. Heim was fhot to death, for neglect of duty.

General Lacy marched from the Ukraine, with an army not exceeding 40,000 regular troops, but a confiderable body of Cofacks and Kalmucks joined this army, paffed the Rotten Sea, or Guiloï More, upon a bridge of boats, beat the Turks and Tartars where ever they met them, returned to the Ukraine loaded with honour, fpoils, and many prifoners*.

Count

* I cannot pafs by the operations of a fmall flotilla of Ruffian boats, acting on the Palus Mæotis this year. They carried fome ammunition and provifions for the army under Count Lacy's orders, as they were returning back to Afoph. One of them, commanded by a French gentleman, L'Efremery, ftruck upon a fand-bank. The Turks obferved it, and cannonaded it very briskly, being far from the reft, and not protected by the army. The brave L'Efremery laid trains to blow up his veffel, then he fent all his men afhore, to make their efcape to the reft of the fleet, which was at fome diftance. The Turks having filenced L'Efremery, and having obferved the men making their retreat

Count Muinich marched from Kiove with a regular army, consisting of 40,000 troops, and many thousands of irregulars, passed the Boristhenes, not far from Kiove, upon pontoons, and, in his march towards Otchakoff, drove with great slaughter all his enemies before him into the city of Otchakoff, (called in other books Oczacow.) An admiral was ordered to attend this army with a fleet of small craft, loaded with provisions; but (it was said, through fear of a Turkish fleet lying opposite to Otchakoff) he did not come up in time. The desert was covered over with great plenty of grass, but it was withered and quite dried up, by the continued drought, which frequently happens in these countries, at that time of the year. The Russians no sooner had arrived in the neighbourhood of Otchakoff, than the Tartars set fire to the grass in the desert. The Russians were obliged, to preserve their camp, to set fire to the grass round it, that the two fires, meeting at a great distance from the camp, might be the less troublesome to the army, and dangerous to their magazines of powder. The consequence of this was, that there was no grass left for the cavalry, but what grew on the banks of the river; add to

treat by land, sent several boats to bring off the vessel; when L'Efremery observed the vessel full of Turks, he set fire to the train, and blew up his vessel, himself, and a good number of his enemies.

this misfortune, that the flotilla, with provisions for the army, was not arrived, nor could the marshal get the least account of it.

Upon this, a council of war being summoned, they were nearly unanimous to retire. In councils of war, the youngest constantly speaks first, and the marshal gives his opinion last of all. The memorable brave General Keith, being second in command, advised them, that it was absolutely impossible to retire, without the help of their flotilla, that if this advice was attempted, they must kill all their horses, lose their artillery, and destroy their ammunition and baggage; because there was no forage remaining; that there was not provision for the army, even at short allowance, for above six or seven days; that, lastly, it was his opinion, the attack of the city should not be delayed, and pointed out the manner of attacking it, offering his service to command in the most dangerous place, tho', by his being second in command, this offer was irregular.

The field-marshal agreed to his advice, plan, and method: Some said, that though Muinich loved Keith, yet he was surely jealous of his growing greatness, as he was the darling of the whole army, both regular and irregular. From whatever motive it happened, the Count adhered to General Keith's advice, and, in the night-time, a body of veterans were lodged in an old Turkish redoubt, which

which lay upon the banks of the river, and at break of day, Gen. Keith led a body of 3 or 4000 men into the dry *fossa* which surrounded the city, which brought the greatest part of the bravest Turks to that side, they fearing that the Russians would scale the walls immediately. Whilst the besieged were in the greatest consternation, and bringing their bravest force against the marshal, who had time to play his mortars and cannon from the proper places agreed upon, and was soon wounded in the knee with a musquet-ball. However, he gave orders never to leave the attack till the city surrendered, which, he assured them, would very soon happen, and then was carried to the camp by six grana-diers. About this time, as was expected, a large body of Spahis rushed out of the east gate, passed by the old redoubt before mentioned, and attacked the Russian camp; but it was too well fortified by the *chevaux de frise*, cannon, and small arms, for them to make the least impression upon it. Upon this, the regulars rushed out, and, at the very first attack, the men formerly mentioned, lodged in the old redoubt, made very dreadful slaughter from behind, and, about this very time, a large bomb broke through their great magazine, which blew it up, with great part of the city. The Spahis, being so hotly handled, fled with great precipitation, and in the greatest confusion, running the gauntlet, as they passed

fed by the old redoubt, the Caffocks, and others, entered the gate with them, bravely maintained their post, and kept the gate open, till greater numbers coming in, mastered it and the city.

In public foreign papers it was said, that the Russians besieged it four days; but the account I have given, I believe to be true, as I had it from gentlemen who were present; and, though the Russians might have been before it four days, yet, I'm persuaded, the city was taken on the very same day in which the first attack was made. Be that as it will, a very terrible massacre ensued. The Turks continued obstinate, and many Russians were slain, which so incensed the victors, that, for some time, they killed every living Turk they met with, sparing neither men, women, nor children.

Tho' my intention is to make my relation very short, yet I cannot help mentioning two brave actions performed by a countryman from Aberdeen, as I was informed, whose name was Innes. Mr Innes, lieutenant in the Horse Guards, asked, and obtained leave, from the Empress, to serve under Count Munich, as a volunteer. He was riding at a small distance before the field-marshal, but in his view, through the streets of Otchakoff. No doubt the officers were much grieved to see the soldiers so mad, that they, at other times most obedient, would not
desist

desist from their butchery. Innes called to a granadier of the Guards, who was barbarously exposing a Turkish child, which he had just pierced with his bayonet, and, in a ridiculous manner, was basely diverting himself with the agonies of the poor little innocent. Innes, determined to put a stop to such barbarity, reproved the granadier in very harsh words: The granadier, as I said, mad with rage, threw the infant from him, and, forgetting all duty, made his way to Innes, who, far from deserting the unequal challenge, received him, put his bayonet aside, (for the fellow intended to have stabbed him) and, at one blow severed his head from his body; another soldier, with great indignation, seeing how Mr Innes had served his friend, made at him with his screwed bayonet also, but met with the very same fate. The field-marshal, being an eye witness of Innes's bravery, greatly commended him. This encouraged some other officers, who soon thereafter got the foldiers brought to a sense of their duty.

With no small fatigue they had become masters of the whole city, except one bastion, where some hundreds of Janizaries had lodged: They were determined to maintain that place with the greatest obstinacy, firing, and throwing grenades at all the Russians who went near them. The field-marshal, though he had barricaded all the avenues to them, and rendered

rendered their escape impossible, yet was uneasy, that such a number of desperate men still held out, nor did he think that he was master of the city, until they were in his power. He therefore gave orders to bring up the artillery, to destroy them. Mr Innes pitied the fate of so many brave enemies : He observed, that the Turks only had fired at men in arms, and the furious heat of their passion was also by this time much abated. The Turks had a way by which they used to draw up their artillery to the top of the bastion. Mr Innes said to his comrades, that he would take these Turks prisoners, providing the Russians could be restrained from firing upon them as they came down. They dissuaded him from so dangerous an undertaking ; but he answered, that he would do it, or die in the attempt, and, sheathing his sword, he rode calmly up to the enemy, amongst whom he espied a pretty youth, of about 15 or 16 years of age. When he came near him, he alighted from his horse, and, taking this youth to be their commander, who indeed was so, approached him in a respectable, though soldier-like manner, called out, Ne bojs, which signifies, Don't fear. Then he put him in mind of the dangerous situation they were in, of the field-marshal's designs, desiring them to observe the haste the Russians were in to bring up their artillery, and assured them, that he had risked his own life to save theirs ; and that if
they

they would march along with him, he would pawn his life and honour, that the field-marshal, who loved, and esteemed brave men, tho' enemies, would treat them as respectfully as they could expect, providing they behaved with becoming moderation. This discourse charmed them, and accordingly they went along with him, and laid their arms at the field-marshal's feet, who carressed the boy, and kept him always at his own table. Some said, that he was the governor's son, others, that he was son of the Khan of the Crim Tartars. The boy said, that it was the barbarity of the Russians which forced them to take the resolution of fighting to the last man. When every thing was quiet, and proper order again established, the marshal returned Mr Innes thanks, at the same time, constituted him lieutenant-colonel of a regiment of horse, and not satisfied with this, in his report to the Empress, he did not forget to make honourable mention of him, and that he had granted him the highest commission which was in the power of a Russian field-marshal to bestow. By the return of the courier, the Empress dispatched a commission to be filled up by the field-marshal, appointing Mr Innes colonel of dragoons.

Every thing being now accomplished according to Count Muinich's wishes, he appointed Major-general Stoffeln governor of Otchakoff, with 12,000 good men, and returned

turned loaded with victory, honour and riches. It was said, that some of the Cossacks filled, and carried home their caps full of gold; and, undoubtedly, the irregulars got great booty, but the regular troops have it not in their power, as they dare not absent themselves from their colours: Thus ended the memorable actions of the year 1737.

C H A P. XLIII.

The Operations of the Armies in the Year 1738.

ADAMIRAL Bredal was ordered to get his fleet of small craft ready early, that Count Lacy's operations might not be retarded for want of provisions and ammunition. This was the reason that the sailors with their officers made so short a stay at Taverhoff. An order from the admiralty had been sent to Bredal, to cause sound the bar at Asoph, to see if it were possible for ships of some force to get over it. The admiral reported, that it was impossible to get over the bar with larger vessels than these already in use, and used all his art to persuade the few British there, to submit to the same opinion; but Capt. Kenzie, Lieutenants Leslie, Every, and Smallman, were of another opinion, protested against the admiral's plan, and sent a report of the soundings, subscribed by them all, which they had

had carefully taken. They alledged that it was possible to build vessels fit to carry 20, or even 30 guns: That, if they were provided with a sufficient number of such vessels, they would not only be in a condition to protect their transports, but did not doubt to give a very good account of the Turkish fleet, notwithstanding the largeness of their ships, or the number of their cannon.

Thus these affairs, undetermined by the admiralty, remained when admiral Bredal returned this year to Asoph; nor had the Russians one ship or vessel which could carry more than six small pieces, four or six pounders each, which were not able to engage ships of 70 great guns, of which the Turks had a great number. This inequality of vessels, and discord among the sea-officers, was the true cause of all the misfortunes which befel them this summer.

In short, a fleet, as I was informed by officers belonging to it, was early enough got ready, and Lieutenant Every, an excellent sailor, was dispatched as commander of one of these little ships, or rather covered boats, to bring advice to Bredal, Whether any Turkish fleet was to be seen in the Palus Mœotis? Mr Every, it seems, performed that piece of service to the satisfaction of every person, except the admiral, who designing he should fall into the hands of the Turks, and being disappointed, was determined to oppress him

right or wrong. He accordingly summoned the officers of the fleet, and, when assembled, let them know, that Mr Every there present, had not performed his voyage according to the meaning of his instructions. The admiral produced a report, with day-books, such as sea-officers keep, giving an account of his failings, foundings, the bays and promontories, which Mr Every had seen in his voyage; and lastly, that on such a day and hour, he Every had seen, from his top-mast-head, a large fleet of Turkish vessels, upon which he instantly changed his course, and returned with all diligence. The midshipmen, and others, under Every's command, being examined, said, that Mr Every's books and observations were very exact, but denied that they had seen the Turkish fleet. Mr Every said, that he had acted up to the meaning of his instructions: That he had acquitted himself as an experienced sailor, which would be proved by the fleet when they sailed out: That, as the instructions were given to him alone, he was not obliged to shew them to any under his command, and that it would have been contrary to the regulations, and to good sense, so to have done.

He likewise plainly told the admiral, that, when he took his leave of him, he Bredal enjoined him to speak of the design of his sailing to none, which Bredal denied. Mr Every said, that if the admiral had intended, that
any

any number under his order ought to have witnessed his having seen the Turkish fleet, he ought to have given it as part of his instructions; and lastly, that as he was the principal commander, and intrusted with the whole expedition, his report and word of honour ought to gain credit. Bredal's council of officers, however, would not blame Mr Every; but the proud admiral, without loss of time, ordered the fleet to sail, openly despising Every's report, giving out that he did not believe there was any Turkish fleet in that sea.

In this, however, he was deceived, and a small share of prudence and good sense might have convinced him that either the Turkish fleet would early put to sea this year, or that in so many thousand Turks, there were none who had power and judgment enough to prevent the Russian boats from doing them probably more mischief than they did in the year 1737; for had it not been for the small flotilla, Marshal Lacy never could have passed his armies into the Crim by the Guilo More. The Russian flotilla sailed, directing their course west towards the Crims, steering as near the northern shore as they could, and sounding frequently. They at last arrived at a promontory, from which neighbourhood Mr Every had reported that he had discovered the Turks. None were here seen, and the admiral exulted greatly. Every said, that he
had

had no orders to advise the Turks to wait in this place ; but that he very probably would see them before they reached the Guiloï More. The provident admiral was so very secure, that he ordered the flotilla to drop anchor during the night time, in the bottom of a deep bay about 300 versts distant from Azoph. Next morning, the weather was so hazy, that they could not see a cable's length before them : About 11 o'clock *A. M.* the air cleared up, which discovered the whole Turkish fleet in the mouth of the bay, hemming in the Russians. They were not idle, their great guns reached the flotilla ; and in short the bravest Russian, that is to say the admiral, and a few of his elect, were first ashore, and happy were they who gained it. I was not informed of any great loss of men on our side, but I was well informed that the Russians destroyed their own fleet by sinking and burning it ; and in short, rendered every thing useless to the Turks. The Russians cast an entrenchment, and mounted a few cannon ashore ; nor durst the Turks land to attack them. A memorable incident happened at this time, which I cannot pass by in silence ; it was this : The entrenchment was not finished, when the brave admiral sent for some of the principal captains, acquainting them that he was taken very ill, and as there was no proper medicines in the desert, he determined to go for help by land to Azoph, and

and therefore he would be glad that they would accompany him. Captain Kenzy flatly refused, telling him that he was resolved to remain, live, or bravely die with those under his command: The admiral however went off, drawn by oxen, accompanied by some of his friends, and left the distressed sailors and a few soldiers to Brigadier Lukine, a far better commander.

The brigadier, having rendered every thing useless to the Turks, decamped and took a few small cannon and ammunition with him, drawn by the cattle they had brought with them for fresh provision. The brigadier, a Russian gentleman, by his good deportment, had gained not only the esteem of the few soldiers, but of all the sailors and their officers. His conduct and bravery was well known to them all, and glad they were of the change. They had not travelled 100 versts, till about 10 o'clock *A. M.* they spied a great dust in the desert, approaching towards them. Lukine ordered the sailors to take the charge of the cannon, and formed the small army into what is called by them, *Battalia de Carrie*, the same, I suppose, which we term hollow square. In this order, they had not marched long, till they discovered about 6000 Turkish horse well appointed, making all the haste they could to get up to them. The brigadier gave short but clear orders, which were well observed. In short, the

the Turks bravely advanced without order, (according to their custom, when they despise the small number of enemies) to the very points of our bayonets: When, the signal being given, immediately began a regular fire platoon-ways from the squares, interspersed with hand granades, whilst the small cannon raked them every way, so that they were soon weary of this drubbing, and rode off, rather faster than they had approached, leaving some hundred horse in the field for use, which our poor men had much need of. A very few of our men were wounded; for the Turks were so soon put into confusion, that the affair was over in about half an hour, and indeed it is worth remarking, that one midshipman only was killed by a cannon ball, during this amphibious expedition.

After this, they proceeded to Azoph without any other hindrance. No history, I am persuaded, can give an account of such another military affair: An admiral, under pretence of sickness, left his command, and arrived, drawn with oxen, with a few of his own kidney, and his sailors bravely equipped on horseback!

*Quid faciant leges ubi sola pecunia regnat,
Et ubi paupertas vincere nulla potest?*

Our admiral Byng suffered death for a less crime, in my opinion: But Bredal, it was said,

said, was protected at that time by the most formidable Duke of Courland.

At their arrival in Azoph, all was in confusion: The admiral's conduct was highly censured by the British, who spoke their minds too freely to the admiral's face. The admiral was justly blameable by all sorts of people, but they spoke with respect. The British were blamed only for imprudently telling the admiral that he was a coward, and ought not to command brave men. A court-martial was ordered to proceed against them, which was composed of the admiral's friends, and it was resolved that Captain Kenzie and George Leslie should be dismissed the Empress's service, and sent out of the Empire without an honourable discharge, or passport: That Lieutenants Every and Smallman should suffer death. I had an early account of all these proceedings the ensuing winter from three sea officers, who, at the same time, delivered me a letter from Lieutenant George Leslie, and a packet of letters, in which, one was directed to Mr Rowndaux the British resident at St Petersburg, another to Count Golovine, one to Mr Bell of Antermoney, and one to Mr George Napier merchant there, pointing out the most unjust and barbarous proceedings of the admiral, and desiring only that, by their means, the Empress might be acquainted with it, so as justice might be done to them.

I could

I could do nothing without the help of Prince Golitzin; and therefore, without loss of time, acquainted him: He desired that I would not mention my having spoken to him, or to any person, but that he would that very night dispatch for St Peterburgh the acutest courier in Taverhoff, and said, that I might take my measures accordingly, with great secrecy. I sent for the courier immediately; he said, that at, or near Moscow, a party of foldiers was stationed on purpose strictly to examine all passengers, for fear of the plague, which raged at this time with great devastation in the Ukraine, and that although it would be ascertained that Taverhoff was quite free, yet they certainly took all letters from private people, and burnt them. I put a piece of money into his hand, and assured him that I would be more generous when he brought me an answer that the packet was received in St Peterburgh. He took my money, and ingeniously made a hole in the thick sole of his sledge, in which he concealed the packet, and so was carried safely to Petersburg: Upon which, an order was dispatched to Bredal, commanding him to send his prisoners to the admiralty, where I shall leave them, and proceed.

C H A P. XLIII.

A continuation of the success of the Russian Army.

IN the beginning of March, a great body of Turks and Tartars designed to make an eruption into the Ukraine, of which Lieutenant General Count Douglass having had certain notice, laid wait for them. They, despising his small army, attacked him with their wonted fury, but were severely drubbed, lost a great many thousand men killed on the spot, had many prisoners taken, and the Khan's great standard fell into his hands.

The next operation worth notice, is the siege of Otchakoff, by a body of about 80,000 Turks and Tartars: Major General Stoffeln was commander in the city; he was left with 12,000 regular troops last year, by the army under the command of Count Mui-nich; but the plague raged in the garrison with great violence through the whole winter, which had carried off upwards of 6000 men, the remaining were, many of them confined to the hospital, and daily dying in great numbers. He therefore, for the benefit of fresh air, had ordered the garrison to encamp in the neighbourhood of the city, except so many as necessarily were obliged to mount

E c

guard

guard in and upon the walls. When they were in this deplorable situation, some of his irregulars, who had been sent to scour the desert, brought him certain advice, that a very considerable army were marching towards Otchakoff. He without delay beat to arms, and every thing was immediately in the best order he could contrive. I was assured by his son, and other officers, that soldiers, who could not stand half an hour at once, mounted the walls. In short, the Turkish army besieged them vigorously three days without intermission, to little purpose, tho', had they known the deplorable condition the garrison was in, it is probable they would not have given it over: They left near one half of their army dead under the walls, which the garrison, (almost exhausted) threw into the Boristhenes. The plague raged with more violence than ever, both here and in Kinburn: This obliged the Russians to destroy these strong cities, and retire to the Ukraine.

The famous Donduk Ambo was the righteous Prince of the Kalmucks; the Empress Anne, however, placed another, by the name of Donduk Dashee, over the Kalmucks at the death of their last Prince. Donduk Ambo would not submit to yield up what he thought his right by lineal descent. The greatest part of the Kalmuck nation joined him, and being afraid to live in the deserts
of

of Astrachan their native country, they fled to Cuban Tartary, situated on the south side of the Palus Mæotis, and put themselves under the protection of the Grand Signior, four or five years before the war broke out. Donduk Ambo did not like his new protector, nor yet the Tartars of Cuban. At the beginning of the war, he would not assist the Turks against the Russians; but let our generals know, that, notwithstanding what had passed betwixt the Court of Petersburgh and him, if the Empress would permit him to live in peace in Astrachan, and reign over the Kalmucks, he would assist the Russian arms with 40, or even 60,000 brave men: This was agreed to, and presents sent from the Empress to Donduk Ambo confirmed this agreement; amongst other presents, the Empress sent him two small beautiful brass cannon of two or three pounders, and a fine scymitar, with the hilt of gold, richly set with precious stones. The Cuban Tartars had been troublesome to him during his stay amongst them; but when he departed to the desarts of Astrachan, they pursued him, until he had the wished for opportunity of trying the metal of his scymitar, which he did so effectually, that he almost extirpated all the fighting men in their country, and returned to the desarts, (after having sent some thousands of his men to the assistance of Marshal Lacy) with innumerable
herds

herds of the Cuban cattle. I shall give a further account of him, and the notable exploits of his princess, who was a Circassian lady, and my patient, after Donduk Ambo's death.

Field Marshal Lacy took the field this year with a gallant army of regulars not exceeding 40,000, and many thousands of irregulars. Let it be observed once for all, that whatever our news papers have said, and may say, the Russian regular armies never exceed 40,000 regular troops: Though in the late Prussian war, our news papers made them exceed that number, I never gave any credit to their assertion, because it is altogether contrary to their rules and custom. I say, Count Lacy proceeded through the desert straight for the Pericop, as Bredal's misfortune had disappointed him. He had not proceeded far when he was threatned by an army of about 120,000 Turks and Tartars. The Count ordered the regulars to form a triangle, and the irregulars to keep in the rear, and form wings to the regulars: After this manner, they proceeded to march daily, notwithstanding the enemy's great army.

At last, the enemy proved more obstinate than formerly: Upon which, a party of irregulars went out to skirmish, who giving way, two or three regiments of dragoons were sent to support them: But, the enemy determined this day to have a general battle, they

they therefore formed themselves into the figure of a wedge, and thus, the last driving on the foremost, drove our dragoons and irregulars before them, who taking shelter behind the army left it quite exposed. A young nobleman, a court favourite, had not only been lately made a colonel, but had leave to pick out the likeliest men from the whole army: Thus he commanded the most lightly regiment, probably in all the armies in Russia. Ambitious of glory, he had obtained the honour to defend the angle opposite to the enemy; it was this regiment the Turks gallantly attacked, and quite routed by which an open passage was made into the center of the army. It seems, the prudent old field-marshal foreseeing that this might happen, had accordingly placed on each side of this infant regiment, two old veteran colonels, with regiments proud of their honour. The one was Colonel Johnston, a Scotsman from Kenneil. The number of scars on his body received in the wars of Russia, was an earnest that he was no coward. The other, as brave, was a Russian; neither of them could count fewer than 70 years of age. These two brave men joined their regiments, and formed the angle in the midst of the Turkish army; their field pieces, small arms, grenades, and bayonets, making sad havock, soon drove back those who were without, whilst these who had broken into the heart of the

army

army could get out no where ; but, after a terrible massacre, were forced to throw down their arms, and beg their lives upon their knees.

Colonel Johnston assured me, that 15,000 prisoners were taken, shackled, and sent to Russia immediately, and it was almost impossible to number the dead, but that he believed 15,000 more had been killed. Next day, the field-marshal, before the whole army, returned thanks to these colonels and their regiments, acknowledging, that, had it not been for their experience and bravery, the whole army would have been in the utmost danger. Old Johnston, with a soldier-like resolution, advised the marshal, to order his young unexperienced officers, for the future, to be cased up amongst the baggage ; which, it is said, he did not take amiss.

Next day, the army marched towards the Pericop, but could not see the enemy all that day. Two days after this, the Turks appeared at a distance, and encamped at night within 14 versts of our army. Thus they continued to march, till they were within two days march of the Pericop. After the Russian army was encamped, and every thing in quietness, the marshal caused all the dragoons mount their horses, and leave all their incumbrance, with the greatest secrecy, and each of them to take a foot soldier behind him. He
ordered,

ordered, at the break of day, on a signal given from the army, an attack to be made upon the Turks all at once, on three different sides of their army, at which time he would be ready to support them with the whole army, and instantly send off the irregulars to their assistance. Every thing was done according to orders, with the greatest exactness, the Turks and Tartars were totally routed, leaving every thing to the conquerors; many were taken prisoners, nor did the Russians ever see them afterwards, till they arrived at the Pericop.

The following account of Count Lacy's actions at, and after taking Pericop, I had from John Baptist, a Capuchine Friar, the marshal's father confessor, and I believe it to be true: He said, that, three days before the Russians arrived at Pericop, it had constantly blown a perfect hurricane from the west: That, when the camp was formed, and, as soon as night came on, he privately sent for his priests to administer the sacrament to him, a custom he always used before he attempted any great action; that done, with a cheerfulness very natural to him, he ordered a glass of wine for the priests, and recommended them to take their rest. He then instantly caused a few of his best troops to get ready, and wait his orders; at the same time he ordered many pieces of cannon to play against Pericop,

Pericop, and all the drums and music in the army to make as much noise as possible.

He then mounted his horse, and rode off with the cavalry formerly mentioned, straight to the gut of water on the east end of Pericop, part of that called Guiloï More, and went quite through it, on a hard bottom, nor was it deep. (The Turks had before this given out, that it was bottomless, which gained so much credit, that the Russians never had attempted to pass it till that night.) The field-marshal finding the bottom hard, returned, ordered all the regular army to be got ready, except 12,000 men, with the irregulars, drums, and music, which he left with orders not to move from their camp, nor leave off firing and making every other possible alarm, during the darkness of the night. In the meantime, the marshal was so diligent, that he safely marched the army and artillery through that water, without the enemy's having the least suspicion of it; further, that the terrible fire from three batteries (which he had made in such hurry in the night-time, against the south and weakest side of the Pericop) carried the first news of the Russian army's being there. Notwithstanding the great surprise the Turks were in, they held out till noon, when their walls being demolished, and the Russians making ready for a general assault, they surrendered themselves prisoners of war, and that very afternoon were shackled,

led, pinioned, and sent off to Russia. After this, the Count marched through all the low country, burnt Bacciesiray, called by the Russians Buchshezeray, and Cassa, with many other towns of smaller note; blew up the Pericop, and returned loaded with spoils, prisoners and honour, and a very great number of fine brass and other cannon. I saw some of them with the Imperial arms of Germany upon them.

Thus the Pericop was taken, with the loss of very few men, by the experience and wisdom of one man, which had formerly cost the Russians, each time they attempted it, many thousand brave men; add to this, that at this time the northern walls of Pericop were much more regular and strong, than ever they had been before the siege.

C H A P. XLV.

A Continuation of the Success of the Russian Arms.

COUNT Muinich marched his army thro' the desarts bordering upon Poland, from the Boristhenes to the river Niester, notwithstanding armies of Turks and Tartars, triple his number, and all their diligence to obstruct his march daily. He was five times attacked in formed battles, and beat them each

time, with no great loss on his side, but with terrible havock of his enemies.

It was late in the year before he could gain the banks of the Niester, and, when there, he would have risked much, to have, at that time, attempted to force a passage, so far from help, had he not succeeded; therefore he returned through the southern provinces of Poland, loaded with honour. There are a kind of Cossacks, which the Russians call Zaporogs; they inhabit islands in the river Boristhenes, amongst the falls, which makes it extremely hazardous for any enemy to attack them. They are a nest of robbers, and sometimes were under the protection of the Turks, but now are under the Russian government. These are nothing like the Ukraine Cossacks. They have no wives, nor allow of any women in their islands, but have plenty on the banks of the rivers. They compare themselves to the Knights of Malta, by being constantly at war with the Turks and Tartars; that is to say, they live by rapine, tho' professing the Christian religion, and therefore have a priest or two, are the deserters, villainous scum, and outlaws of all the neighbouring nations. They have laws among themselves, and submit to a kind of magistracy, but what these laws are, I presume few know; and indeed it is probable, they are so volatile, that there can no trust be put in them, their principal glory and profession being to destroy

stroy mankind. It is true, they seldom are taken prisoners, because they neither take nor give quarter, and, I'm told, that they take some such oath, before they can be admitted into the community, for they have every thing in common.

The most daring and barbarous amongst them are called Buggateers, which is a title all the Tartar nations give to heroes.

They pretend to fight only against the Turks ; but I shrewdly suspect, that they make inroads into Poland, at such times assuming the name of Haydnaks, whose abominable cruelties we frequently are made acquainted with in the news-papers. They form a good barrier betwixt the Tartars inhabiting the west of the Boristhenes and the Ukraine ; for if their flocks or herds come within their reach, they commonly kill the people who feed them, drive off the cattle, and sell them to the Polish, Russian, or Ukraine borderers.

Complaints had been brought last year, to Count Muinich, that sundry inroads had been made by some of his irregulars into the southern provinces of Poland ; wherefore, this year, when the whole army was assembled on the western banks of the Boristhenes, before they began to march, the count ordered proclamation to be made, that whoever made any inroads into the kingdom of Poland, should be punished with death.

Though

Though none could plead ignorance of these orders, yet the army had scarcely marched four days, when complaints, well authorised by one of the Polish voivades, were received, declaring, that a small number of Zaporogi had burnt two or three villages to the ground, murdered many of the inhabitants, and carried off all their cattle.

The field-marshal immediately made strict enquiry into this affair, and found it clearly proved, that two of the Zaporogi chief Bug-gateers were guilty, whom he ordered instantly to be hanged, little regarding the most serious solicitations which their friends made to spare their lives, who, at the same time, offered the count an immense sum of money, if he would, but for this once, spare them. This year they had sent 6000 men to the assistance of the Russians, but finding that they would be allowed only to act against the enemy, they, in a few days after this execution, withdrew, and retired to their islands.

C H A P. XLVI.

Concerning the Success of the Russian Arms in the Year 1739.

LAST year the Crim Tartars had been so severely handled by Count Lacy, that they made no eruptions into the Ukraine this winter,

winter, and indeed I believe the greatest number of men able to bear arms, were either killed in battle, or made prisoners. However, the Turks supplied them with all the help they could spare during the winter season; for they had great reason to fear, that the Russians would conquer the whole Crim or Crimea, which, if they had done, would have proved most dangerous to the Turkish empire: For, if ever the Russians can master Jenicala and Taman, which command the isthmus leading into the Palus Mœotis, they will effectually protect a safe navigation thro' that sea; and if their fleet should prove superior to that of the Turks, nothing can hinder their sailing to Constantinople. This I take to be one reason why the Turks are so much afraid of the Russians having a fleet on these seas, and that they constantly deny them this liberty, by making it one of the principal articles of peace.

Donduk Ambo began early to fill the Cuban country with dreadful devastations; not contented with their herds and flocks, he killed or took prisoners all the Cubans who were found in arms; but, tho' the Ukraine was, by the superior talents and care of our victorious generals, secured from the inroads of the enemy, the plague made great havock, which shall be taken notice of in its proper place. This was the cause of our marshal's leading out their armies sooner than formerly; and, tho'

tho' they could not march till the snow was gone, and the desarts covered with grass, they encamped far from inhabited places.

Count Lacy marched about the beginning of June, as formerly : He soon made himself master of Pericop, and marched to the southern parts of the Crim ; but, though he met with no considerable force to obstruct his operations, he could proceed no further, because Bredal (either from the confusion his whole command was in, or from the fright he was put into last year, or from the want of sufficient vessels) was not in condition to bring either ammunition or provisions for the army, and the Crim Tartars so effectually concealed their grain, that none could be got sufficient to maintain one regiment, tho' they got some cattle. Add to this, that, though, as I said before, the Tartars and Turks durst not give battle, yet in narrow defiles they galled our army from the heights, where neither the dragoons nor irregulars could pursue them. However, he caused burn the towns and cities to the ground, in the countries through which he passed, that the enemy might have other employment, during the winter, than making inroads into the Ukraine. When he had distressed their country as much as possible, he returned early into the Ukraine, but two or three regiments had contracted the plague, and were therefore obliged

ged to encamp in the desert till they recovered, which was not till late in winter.

C H A P. XLVII.

A Continuation of the Success of the Russian Arms under the Orders of Count Muinich.

THE following narration I had from gentlemen in the army, who were eye-witnesses of whatever happened. Upon the 5th or 6th of June, the count marched with his victorious army, well appointed, straight to Chotzim, commonly called Choczim, without meeting with any thing very extraordinary. He carried with him a good train of artillery, besides field-pieces, and arrived on the banks of the river Kniskofske about the 20th inst. In the march two accidents happened, which, altho' they seem may trifling to some, may be agreeable to others, and therefore I shall relate them.

A lieutenant-general was lost in the desert, nor could any notice be got of him during the march of the army to Chotzim. The other was Captain Gray, born in Prussia of English parents, a good officer, and an excellent engineer. The field-marshal ordered him to give directions for placing pontoons over the rivers, and regulating the transportation of the battering cannon, great mortars, and other

other heavy carriages. This captain was in very great friendship with a French gentleman, whose name I have forgot. The French captain was extremely good natured, lively, and gave himself very little trouble to think of weighty matters, or to foresee what misfortunes might happen by the loss of a little time, even when engaged in the most serious affairs. At the time when Mr Gray was bringing down a large piece of cannon from a steep bank, which, if not managed with great skill, would not only have killed many of the horses, but might either have run into the river and be lost, or probably destroy the pontoons, upon which, I suppose, the safety of the army did not a little depend. Be that as it will, when Captain Gray was in the greatest anxiety about the safety of the cannon, his friend, the Frenchman, addressed him with troublesome importunity about trifling affairs. Gray, after he had once or twice desired him to desist for that time, at last, in a passion, uttered some words in German, rather harsh, and the Frenchman not knowing the meaning of them, asked some other of his acquaintances, who, in a ludicrous manner, informed him. After the artillery was carried safely over, and the army in march, the Frenchman challenged Gray to give him satisfaction. As nothing else would do, they retired privately into a neighbouring wood, and there satisfied themselves by wounding each other.

None

None of their wounds proved mortal, but the anxiety of the one for the safety of the other, was the cause of a consultation of surgeons, and thus it became public.

The premier major of their regiment was an old unpolished Russian. He carried a report of the affair to all his superiors, at last to Count Muinich, complaining, that two officers had acted against the regulations ; that, according to his duty, he had complained of it to all his superiors, from his lieutenant-colonel upwards regularly to his Excellency, and demanded, that, without loss of time, this affair might be enquired into by a court-martial. The marshal desired the major to desist from such prosecution, which the major flatly refused, for many reasons. Upon this, the marshal kept the report, and dismissed him, without letting him know what he intended to do. The count next sent for the officers, examined them himself, and desired, that they would, without restraint, tell him the truth. They did so, but with this remarkable difference, that each endeavoured to persuade the marshal, that he only was guilty, and that his antagonist was innocent. The marshal soon learned how the affair stood, admired their sentiments of honour, and recommended them to moderate their passion for the future, thinking a few hours before they came to extremes ; and then dismissed them in a most affectionate manner.

Next morning early, their major and they were sent for to the count's tent. They had not waited long when he appeared, and delivered a commission to each of the captains, constituting them majors for their honourable services, and then he gave the major an order to proceed from the army to Oranburgh, with expresses to its governor; and that as he was not young, he should there officiate as a garrison-major, till further orders. This was a bitter dose, but death would have followed disobedience. Thus this wrong-headed man, by his foolish obstinacy, was obliged instantly to march alone through many desarts, most of them infested with the enemy, to the distance of near 3000 miles, and become a garrison-major, and probably with the hopes of no sudden advancement.

During this march, we were frequently in view of the enemy, who were triple our number; but, having been defeated five different times last year, with great slaughter on their side, and a very inconsiderable loss on ours, it seemed that they now designed to risk all in a decisive battle near Chotzim; and, notwithstanding their great loss last year, they seemed to be certain, that, without great difficulty, they would extirpate this gallant army, which had beaten them so frequently; for they drew up all their forces on the other side the river Niester, and gave the Russians no molestation whatever, though they knew that
the

the Russians intended to besiege the strong fortress of Chotzim, from which place they were distant only about six versts. The count encamped in a very low ground, having the Turkish army on the top of a high ground in front, and another army of Crim Nogas, and other Tartars, consisting of at least 100,000 men, on a hill to our left. The Turkish army, it was said by many, consisted of 20,000 Janizaries, and 60 or 70,000 Spahis. The Russians took the pontoons from the river, and brought them among the baggage. At midnight, the marshal sent off, with the greatest secrecy, 500 of our best granadiers, under the command of chosen captains, to a gullet in the hill, to the left of the Turkish army, with orders to ly concealed, till a signal, by throwing up a rocket, should warn them to act according to the orders they had received.

Next morning the Russians were all in a stir, and, after prayers, they marched with their field-pieces, and some small mortars, chiefly drawn by men; for the hill in some places rendered the horses useless. Thus they directed their march towards the right, and advanced till the marshal imagined the Turkish cannon might hurt them. The Turks, not doubting that the Russians intended to gain the top of the hill there, had assembled all their Janizaries and best troops; but they were soon undeceived, when they saw them suddenly march with great diligence immediately

ately under the top of the hill to the left, towards the place where the granadiers were concealed. This unexpected movement put them into great disorder; for they not only had expected them to mount the hill, on the fore-mentioned place, with their best troops, but had pointed their largest cannon that way, which were placed on carriages without wheels, so that they were rendered almost useless on this occasion. Add to this, that the Turkish camp was open near to where the granadiers were placed, that their horse might readily march out and in as need required. In their hurry they advanced to the very place where the granadiers were, and then the signal was given, when they played their part so well, that our field-pieces and mortars gained the top of the hill; with these the Turkish cannon were immediately deserted, and indeed proved of no manner of use to them during the action.

Now, every where among the Turks there was nothing but death and confusion; their camp was set on fire in various places; our cannon, small arms, and grenades, made sad havock in front, whilst the bombs were burning and bursting in their camp and rear. After they had lost three-fourths of their Janizaries, they fled in such confusion, that none entered Chotzim. The Tartars made some feeble attempts upon our camp, but never came up in time to help the Turks;
and,

and, it was said, they advised them to throw every heavy thing away, alledging, that our irregulars, who were quite fresh, would soon be with them: Whether the Turks followed their advice, is uncertain, but it is certain, that they threw much away, some of which our troops got, but their own Tartars got much more.

One anecdote is very remarkable. The priest of a regiment got on horseback, with a large brass cross in his hand, and rode with the foremost of the soldiers, encouraging them to follow the cross, assuring them, that no hurt could happen to them who did so. It is certain, that this priest was not wounded; and it is as certain, that he was nobly rewarded by the Empress; though it is no less evident, that these gallant troops needed no such encouragement. It is also very dubious, whether many very learned men would venture, so implicitly, as to trust to the singular favour of heaven, amidst the sound of so many thousand and thundering messengers of death?

C H A P. XLVIII.

A continuation of the Success of the Russian Arms, under the Command of Count Muinich.

THE victorious army had now little else to do, but to march to Chotzim, and demand the gates to be opened : They did so : The seraskier indeed required some hours to deliberate, and consult with his friends, what was safe and honourable to be done. However, the answer Count Muinich returned was disagreeable and determined, viz. “ You shall yourself bring the keys in half an hour ; if you exceed that time, not one of the garrison shall escape death.” Thus spoke Count Muinich ! and at same time ordered the artillery to be brought forward in all haste. However, he needed not have been in such a hurry, for the Turks had great reason to know him well, and did not doubt the veracity of his threats : Therefore the seraskier, without delay, offered up the keys, with the whole garrison at his back, who, with the rest of their countrymen and soldiers, were immediately shackled and sent off to Kiove, under the orders of Lieutenant-general Byron.

In this city of Chotzim, it was said, great treasures were got ; and warlike ammunition
of

of all sorts, were found in the greatest abundance, and no less than 300 brass cannon mounted, besides other pieces. I have been likewise informed, that here they found their lieutenant-general, whose name I shall not mention, lest it should disoblige a good ancient Russian family. The general, no doubt, was glad to be restored, as he thought, to his liberty, congratulated the victorious marshal, and returned him thanks for being the instrument of his relief: But this severe disciplinarian answered him, that, according to the regulations of war, he ought to have taken better care of himself than he had done, and not have exposed so respectable a character as a lieutenant-general to be taken prisoner in such a manner. He put him in mind, that he ought not to have gone to reconnoitre the enemy, without a certain respectable number of chosen troops, to protect him from falling into their hands.

Therefore the marshal remanded him back to prison, till a court-martial should determine his fate, which was instantly ordered to sit. By their sentence, agreeable to the Russian articles of war, it was determined, he had forfeited all his military honour, and therefore he was declared a dragoon, till the Empress's pleasure should be known. The sentence was just, and agreeable to the articles of war, therefore no favour could be granted; none was asked, submission took place, and he was obliged

obliged instantly to officiate as other dragoons, though he was a gentleman of large possessions, and one of the principal representatives of a very antient family in Russia. All the favour he asked of the count was, that he might have liberty to have his unfortunate state represented, without loss of time, to the Court. This was granted, and he dispatched one of his trusty servants to St Peterburgh in August, at which time this affair happened. I saw him enter Veronits with 40 or 50 attendants, in November following, in his way to St Peterburgh, tho' only a dragoon.

The soldiers upon duty at the gates of the city paid him no respect, which indeed was right, and agreeable to the articles of war; but I was grieved to hear them say, that now, notwithstanding his great riches, he was only their brother, *viz.* a dragoon. However, he did not long remain in this station, for he was soon appointed governor of the kingdom of Kazan.

Having thus got possession of this strong place, Wallachia and Moldavia having no troops to defend them, were at the mercy of the count; but the greatest part of the inhabitants, being Christians of the Greek profession, needed no compulsion. They were told, and no doubt believed, that, at last, the Russians were come to free all the Christians in Greece from the heavy Turkish yoke. Thus the field-marshal made an easy conquest as far

as the banks of the Danube. Some of our news-papers said, that he conquered Bender, but this is a mistake, as he never pointed that way, well knowing, that if the war went on, he, next summer, could fix himself so firmly in these provinces, that all the different people on the east would submit, without great trouble. It was confidently reported, and I believe it to be true, that Count Muinich desired only 20,000 regular troops to be added to these he already commanded, early in the summer 1740, and that he made no doubt of putting her Majesty in possession of Constantinople; but all these grand schemes and expectations suddenly dropped, by an order from Petersburgh, giving an account that the Emperor of Germany had made peace with the Turks, and that the Russians had acceded to the same, and therefore requiring that the count should evacuate all that country, and return into Russia with all diligence.

He visited the capital of Wallachia, and carried off all the cannon. In Chotzim, Jassy, the Turkish camp, and on the road, they got no fewer than 800 cannon, besides mortars, &c. These were all brought to Chotzim; but, when the count received the above mentioned order, he was at a loss what to do with so many brass cannon. He at last determined to sell them to Jewish merchants from Poland, and was content to take at the rate of $1\frac{1}{2}$ d.

per lib. only the Jews were obliged to get them broken at their own expence.

Thus this war ended, it seems, to the mutual satisfaction of both nations, but to both their great loss; for altho' the Russians were every where victorious, and had conquered Wallachia, Moldavia, and all the countries lying betwixt them and the Boristhenes; tho' they every summer gave laws to the Crim, and kept or destroyed many of their strong places, while their distressed inhabitants were glad to fly to the mountains; tho' they had almost totally extirpated the inhabitants of Cuban, taken and destroyed Asoph, Pericop, Otchakoff, Chotzim, and many other cities; and lastly, tho' they had defeated the Turkish armies at all times, with incredible slaughter, and had sent into Russia innumerable thousands of prisoners, and brought home very great riches; yet, by the peace, most of their conquests were given up.

If now we balance their losses, we may have a just idea of the truth of what I said above. By the peace they got some more desert to the west of the river Boristhenes and south of Poland, than they had formerly. Reason, however, shows this acquisition to be of no value to the Russians, who already have, in their own Empire, more uninhabited country, than, moderately speaking, the one half of Europe. The next and only advantage they got, was to destroy Asoph, and render it a desert; but then all commerce betwixt

twixt the two empires must be transported in Turkish vessels. It is true, that the Russians have nothing to hinder them (if another war should happen) from marching directly into Cuban.

Tho' the Russians did not lose many men in battle, yet it cannot be denied, that they lost great numbers by fatigue, want of water, travelling thro' these scorching deserts, and by the plague. Tho' all care was taken to keep these losses secret, yet I shall give one reason why I say so: The armies acting on the Ukraine and against the Turks, I compute not to have exceeded 120,000 men in all. In the year 1738 these armies were recruited with 50,000 men, and in the year 1739 with 100,000 men; add to these, the devastation made by the plague in the Ukraine. I do not pretend to assert any number. I shall only instance Paveloffke, and a large village, distant from it 20 versts. In the former, I was credibly informed, that no less than 50,000 people died, and in the latter, which was only 10 versts distant from Ikorits, where Prince Golitzin commanded 30,000 men for building vessels, I was assured, that the plague carried off at least 20,000 men: But how inconsiderable are these two towns in comparison of the whole Ukraine? In the year 1739, Dr Miniatty, who was expressly sent to the Ukraine, to give necessary directions about this formidable disease, and inspect

inspect every suspected place, made the number of dead so incredible, that I shall not repeat what he said, although he was a man of great veracity and honour. Add to this, that what he said was in confidence that I should not speak of it to his prejudice, which now I do not, because he is dead.

At present the Russians have it not in their power to act against the Turks by sea, because the bar at Asoph is not deep enough to float large ships, which was the reason that Peter the Great was at so much expence, after he had demolished Asoph, in building Tagenrook. He was afterwards obliged to restore Asoph, and fill up, and otherways render useless the fine new made harbour Tagenrook, by the fatal agreement at Pruth. When a new war shall happen betwixt them, I have some reason to believe, that the Russians will apply all their power and skill to conquer the two sides of the isthmus leading from the Palus Mæotis into the Black Sea. If ever they should become masters of this, then Constantinople will be in imminent danger, and, I imagine, the Crim will instantly beg to be their tributaries, because they can be in no safety otherways.

If the Russians should ever get possession of that isthmus, they can bring to it ships of as great burthen as any in Europe. They have such great plenty of timber growing on the banks of the Don, that they might build

10,000 ships of the greatest force ; and, if they have good officers, the natives make excellent sailors ; and, where money is, officers will not be long a-wanting. Then they may command commerce at the walls of Constantinople, and if that should ever happen, how far it might prove beneficial to Russia, and safe to our Levant company to carry their Turkey trade that way, I am not politician enough to determine ; but one thing I am certain of, and that is, that there seems to be no danger from pirates in the Baltick ; that the expence of carriage, if rightly managed, betwixt Petersburgh and Taverhoff, will be very small, and from thence, by the Don to Asoph in barks, can be but trifling. Moreover, the Russians know their interest too well, ever to be against a project, which would undoubtedly be of advantage to them in many respects. The observations I have here made may amuse, but cannot greatly disoblige the reader. Schemes, every way more extraordinary, have been projected, and, when all disadvantages have been fully understood and known, have yet proved of singular utility to our country.

The Russians can build no vessels of force upon the Dnieper or Boristhenes ; because it would be quite impossible to transport them through the cataracts where the Zaporogi live, and they have neither woods nor inhabitants

bitants on either side of the river, betwixt these cataracts and the Black sea.

C H A P. XLIX.

Concerning the nature of the climate, and diseases properly endemical, with the Author's opinion of the causes.

TO make this chapter the less disagreeable to my readers of all kinds, I acquaint them, that I shall enter no farther upon this subject, than only superficially to touch upon what is proposed above, that it may be of some use both to people educated in the medical profession, and also to those who may travel into those parts.

About the middle of March, the weather was temperate, and continued so till May, when the heat increased considerably; and June began with rain. July was more serene, seldom any showers, but excessively hot, the heat and drought increased till the latter end of August: After that, the air was gradually colder with rain till the month of October, or beginning of November, when frost sets in. Let it be observed about the evenings, after the sun was set, thick stinking fogs arose from the morasses and woods constantly through the whole summer: After the high waters proceeding from the melted snow and ice were quite

quite gone, and the waters were confined within their own proper banks, and as the heat came on, a thick scum appeared on the stagnating waters only, and increased with the heat and length of the summer: in August I measured them, and, in waters surrounded with trees, I found them to measure four or five inches deep. Add to this, that in very hot calm weather, they produced a very disagreeable stinking smell. In March, the snow had no sooner disappeared than a thousand delightful beauties arose out of the desert, but the morasses and low grounds were covered with waters till the middle of May O. S. then indeed, they appeared like a very rich garden, exhibiting to our sight and smell abundance of different flowers. Here the lily of the valley grows in such abundance, that I question if all the gardens in Britain can produce so many as one square mile of Taverhoff morass. They produce, as I said before, many other useful and pleasant vegetables; in the day time, one is charmed with the pleasant notes of singing birds, such as blackbirds, thrushes, larks, &c. in the night, the nightingales have frequently diverted me from sleep. June produces great flocks of water-fowl; the end of July produces fruits, such as water-melons, a variety of different melons, &c. but as no gentlemen live here constantly, there are none of our European fruits cultivated. Satisfied with a few

few flowers and pot-herbs, during the short time, they wish to reside in so very unhealthy a climate; health is only wanted to make Taverhoff one of the most delightful places in the world.

Endemical diseases, the two years I resided here, did not make their appearance till the beginning of July, at which time, intermittent, remittent, flow fevers were very rife, and increased till near the end of this month, when they decreased till the latter end of August, and the remittent, flow fevers disappeared: But the regular intermittent fevers were more obstinate than before this, and fluxes of all kinds accompanied them till the beginning of October, when, as the winter drew on, they disappeared, and gave place to pleurifies, peripneumonies and inflammatory diseases of all kinds, which also disappeared when the frost was continual, and the waters were frozen over. Above, I have only spoken of these diseases which make their appearances near a fixed time of the year, which I observed, and noted down the very dates two years successively. I was also informed, that they always raged, whether in time of war or peace, much in the same way, but proved more obstinate and fatal to strangers than to inhabitants. In the hot months, malignant, putrid, petechial, erysipelatous fevers made their appearances in the most formidable manner, during the two years I was

was there : But at the same time, I was informed that they neither appeared with such violent rapidity, nor in such numbers in time of peace : Therefore, I do not rank them with the former, but they put on, in the 1739, such horrid appearances that I was uncertain if we were quite free of the plague, as will presently appear.

In the year 1739, Mr Rosen the surgeon of the hospital, (Mr Bourman being dead) sent for me to visit the hospital. At my arrival, he told me a patient was brought from Ikorits with very uncommon symptoms, and therefore, he had sent for me to consult what was to be done, and how we were to act. This patient, a sailor, was carried into the ward where malignant putrid fevers were taken care of. He had been sick the third day, was covered all over with small black *petechiæ*, and his tongue and mouth, as far as we could observe, with a thick black fur: his pulse was scarcely sometimes to be observed, at other times very irregular, with a *subsultus tendinum*. He had lost all senses whatsoever ; his eyes were inflamed, but appeared rather of a livid than a red colour. He passed urine and excrements without any perception. At Ikorits, he had been blooded, vomited, and his back, arms, and legs were blistered, of which he had no manner of feeling. As the plague raged with great violence in Pavelofsk and the foremen-

tioned village, I scrupled not, though I had never seen that disease, to pronounce it to be the plague: The sick man, and every thing belonging to him, was carried into a little ward, where maniacs had been formerly kept, now vacant: And as the weather was extremely warm and no wind, I ordered the windows of the sick wards to be kept open through the day, and the floors and bed-cloaths of the sick to be sprinkled frequently with vinegar, and also morning and evening, and the wards universally to be well fumigated with fragrant gums, of which we were allowed great plenty.

As all hopes of recovering the patient from Ikorits were lost, I advised that drink should be frequently given him with antiseptic medicines, and that he should be kept as clean as possible; and lastly, that the man appointed to attend him, should have no intercourse either with the men in the hospital, or elsewhere in the city. I prognosticated that he would soon die, and he did so that very day. At night, the body was carefully carried out to the desert, and buried deep in the ground: His bed, bed-cloaths, and every thing else belonging to him, were burnt. The people, who were appointed to do this, kept as far on the windy side as possible, and none were allowed to touch any thing, but the person who had waited upon him when living, and they who brought him, were obliged to stay their

their quarantine in the desert, where victuals were regularly carried to them. Three persons were in this manner brought from Ikorits, before instructions and orders could be sent there to prohibit this practice. They had all the same symptoms, were treated much in the same manner, and they all died.

As soon as Mr Rosen and I had taken all the precautions in our power, we went to Captain Russelius, and acquainted him with what we had observed, and what we had done, and hinted to him what we thought ought to be done. The captain was of opinion, that, notwithstanding the Prince at this time was not in good health, he ought to be made acquainted with every thing, because his orders would have a better effect, and would be respected at a greater distance. We accordingly made the Prince acquainted with it, and he immediately caused me get ready instructions, till directions could be procured from the Medicine Chancery, which had forgotten to give me any about the plague. I immediately obeyed, and the Prince from this issued out the following orders.

Mr Russelius immediately dispatched a secret memorial to the governor of Veronits, requiring him to take all care of his province, and sent him a copy of the prince's orders to all immediately under his command, which were, prohibiting all people, under pain of death, to go from Taverhoff to any other city, town,

or

or inhabited place, without liberty from the Prince's Chancery, and likewise any people from other places to enter Taverhoff, or its dependencies; and that these orders might meet with all obedience without mistakes, centinels were placed about the city day and night. He required that no flesh or fish should be made use of, till further advice; but that, in case diseased people were advised by any of the faculty to use such food, it was recommended that such should use either vinegar, lemon-juice, or other acid vegetables, to which they were formerly accustomed; that, under pain of a severe whipping, the inhabitants should keep their houses sweet and clean, open their windows through the whole day, and sprinkle their floors and bed-cloaths with vinegar; that the poor should get vinegar from the Empress's stores.

That, if any dead animal was found in the streets, or any where near the houses, the superintendant should be severely punished; and that, if it could be made appear, that any, after these orders were published, from carelessness, or any other cause, did not immediately bury all dead animals, even to the bigness of a chicken, deep in the desert, they should be punished with the Knout! That the priests, who always attend burials, should take all care that the graves should be at least seven foot deep; that, in every street, there should be kept day and night, pieces of
fir,

fir, wet straw, with pitch or tar smoaking, till further orders. Their times of working, althetick exercifes, and other diverfions, were alfo regulated.

The fame orders were fent to Ikorits, with thefe only differences, that it was ftrictly ordered they fhould fend no fick to Taverhoff, but form an hofpital apart to receive fuch as were infected with thefe fymptoms accounted dangerous, and that the attendants upon them fhould have no communication whatfoever with other people, till further orders: That what expreffes might be fent to Taverhoff, fhould be enjoined not to offer to come near any people on the road, nor in the city Taverhoff, but that they fhould approach the city from that part oppofite to the wind; and there, from as great diftance as poffible, to acquaint the foldier on duty with his orders. A writer at fuch times went, and, in the defart, on the windy fide, took a copy of fuch difpatches, which were immediately burnt. Laftly, a line of foldiers was formed quite round the people in Ikorits, and high gibbets built on thefe lines, to let ftrangers and others fee their danger, if they paffed them, for the law would infantly have been put in execution.

From whatever caufe, whether from the immediate protection of heaven, or from thefe regulations having been ftrictly obeyed, I fhall not difpute, but certainly I faw no
more

more of these terrible fevers: Some indeed appeared in Ikorits, but, considering the number of people there, and its vicinity to the before-mentioned infected places, it is truly surprising that we escaped so very well.

From the situation of Taverthoff, its being surrounded with morasses, lakes, large woods, and reeds, with what I have said already about the extraordinary heat and moisture, and the stinking exhalations towards the evenings, from the stagnant waters in the lakes, it will surprise none, ever so little versant in medicine, that the solids of the human body should be rendered very weak, by being, through so many months, as it were stewed, the secretory and excretory faculties perverted, concretions, obstructions, and viscosities in the fluids nourished, and daily increased, digestion much impaired: these I take to be the true causes of the endemical diseases. The method of curing them is, in promoting the evacuations, to perfect regularity, attenuating the viscous humours, and expelling the morbid; and lastly, in corroborating the solids, and for some time thereafter assisting them to recover their natural tone, I imagine is a good proof of the cause.

But there is another undeniable one; which is, that peasants, having no assistance from the physician, who fall into these diseases, and have the good fortune not to die, generally remain sick during the first summer; but when

when winter comes on, and their solids are rendered strong by the frost, the disease is conquered; and this natural cure, when it happens, is undoubtedly the most certain. I shall say nothing more about the method of curing these different diseases, as quite foreign to this design, only I can assure physicians, that necessity caused us to make trial of monk's rhubarb in place of Chinese; and, if it be given in a double or even a triple dose, it comes nothing behind the other in fluxes. Another medicine I can scarcely pass by, which is *vitrum ceratum antimonii*. It has a greater effect upon people almost worn out with either a diarrhoea or dysentery, providing the greater glands of the abdomen are not ulcerated, than it has upon robust young men just seized with this disease. I have known people, in the opinion of physicians of the greatest experience, past all hopes of recovery, effectually, and in a very short time, quite recovered by two or three doses of this noble medicine, with proper analepticks after its use. This digression, tho' short, may be useful to some, and can hurt none.

C H A P. L.

Concerning various Anecdotes during my two Years Peregrination in and about Taverhoff.

I Remained in the house that I got from Capt. Hertzenbergh till May, very much to my satisfaction. The Prince had a very numerous family, and, when they got notice that it was determined that the superintendency of the building should be in Taverhoff, the Princess arrived there, in the beginning of May, with her children. They were not long there till some of them began to fall sick. The Prince and Princess were both of them the best of parents, extremely fond of their children, and had the art of bringing them up without any severe treatment, in the most agreeable manner. His sons had a governor, and his daughters a governess. The sons slept altogether in one large room, each in a separate bed, and their sisters in another, with their governess, in the same manner.

They rose at stated hours in the morning, paid their devotions, were dressed, took their meals, went to school and their diversions, daily. In short, I never knew such a large family so well educated, and under an equal œconomy. They had seven children, four sons and three daughters, at the Princess's arrival;
and

and she was delivered of a fifth son in Taverhoff, who was her last. This great and ancient family is derived from one of the most illustrious in Poland. Their first appearance in Russia, was in the tyrant Ivan Vasilovitch's time; they were created Dukes of Novogorod Velike, and to this day bear the arms of that province. My Prince and his Princess commanded respect from the greatest people, by their easy sweet deportment. I'm certain they had the best wishes and services I could possibly do them, out of pure principle. I never knew a family that in the least could be compared to them.

As I said before, some of the Princess's children fell sick soon after her arrival; and, it seems, the Prince had lost 15 servants by sickness last year, which frightened them much. They therefore desired that I would live with the adjutant, telling me, that, in that case, I should have nothing to provide, either for myself, servant, or horse. I could deny them nothing, and therefore acquiesced, notwithstanding I foresaw, that some difference might happen betwixt the adjutant and me; nor was I mistaken; for, one day, when he and I were both absent, the lock of my desk was picked, and 30 crowns taken away. My servant was with me; and, as I had driven to Veronits, I needed pocket-money, and took some out in the morning, when my cash was safe. At my return, I put up what I had in my

K k

pocket,

pocket, and thus made the discovery. In order to deceive me, he (the adjutant's servant) had not taken all. He being present, I censured him for it; he denied, and returned reproachful answers, which obliged me to beat him. This certainly was wrong: His master took it highly amiss, notwithstanding I acknowledged my error to him. He not only did not forgive this rashness caused by provocation, but took the rogue's part so far, as to give me names, which I retorted, and indeed scarcely could refrain myself from striking him. This he wanted much, but I retired. At my return, I learned, that he had complained to the Prince, requiring that a court-martial should determine our dispute, alledging, that I had challenged him. The Prince made enquiry; I told him as above, and said, that I had not challenged him, but only contended that he durst not give me such language at a distance from witnesses: I said, I knew he scarcely had a soul a degree above a sheep's; and therefore it would have been a sign of great folly in me to challenge such a milk-sop as he. I desired the Prince to let the court-martial proceed, demonstrating, that, as he was the first aggressor, and had learned me to use such words, the signification of some of them I was ignorant of, I certainly should be justified, and recover the money his servant had stolen from me.

That

That the Empress had 350,000 good soldiers, each of which she could make an officer every jot as good as Balotnicoff ; but that it would prove a little difficult to create one of my profession out of them all. I said a great deal more ; to all which, the Prince desired that I would for this once put it up. I yielded, and immediatly Balotnicoff was sent for, and commanded that he should never dare to give me the smallest provocation after this, under the penalty of being instantly sent to Asoph, which was very near as horrible to him as hell itself. Thus ended this dispute, nor had I any other in Taverhoff, with this advantage to me, that I got an agreeable apartment in the palace ; the Prince made up my loss, and the Princess ever after, until I was married, was my cash-keeper.

The above-mentioned disease ran like wild fire through this most noble family ; but, to my great satisfaction, not one of them died. However, in the year 1739, the good Prince was at once affected with a fever and bloody flux. As I never loved man equal to him, my constant attendance, without sleep for nine days and nights, except in an elbow-chair at his bed-side for half an hour at a time, had almost deprived me both of my appetite and strength. My old friend Dr Miniatty, an acquaintance of the Prince's, came in his way from the Ukraine to Veronits; I therefore begged of him that he would attend the Prince,
till

till I should get a sleep in my bed ; but when I had only laid myself down a very short time, I was seized with the *incubus*, a disease I never had experienced before. I attempted thrice to get rest, and thrice I was attacked with this dreadful disease, which put sleep quite from me. I then put on my cloaths, told what had happened, and let the doctor pass on to Veronits.

In a few days thereafter, the Prince grew somewhat better, but recovered very slowly ; and, after he was quite free of this flux and fever, he was threatened with a dropfy. There were few parts of his body free of what is called *anasarca*, but his legs were worse, attended with such coldness, that it was almost impossible to make him sensible of heat. It took my greatest skill to recover him during the length of the summer ; but at last it was so successfully accomplished, that I'm told he only died at St Petersburg last year, betwixt 80 and 90 years old, full of honour, which he truly deserved : He was then lord high admiral, senator, privy-counsellor, and knight of the order of St Andrew, the first Russian order.

Before I leave this subject, I shall give one instance of the Prince's justice: When he was in such an uncertain state of health, and as I did every thing in my power for his recovery, I advised him, among other things, to go to a pleasant village about two miles distant from Taverhoff, called Shilofke, situated

ated on the top of a high dry ground, and a mile at least from any woods, except those in the morafs betwixt Taverhoff and it, whence the vapours seldom or never ascended so high; and was well watered with a fountain of spring water, as clear as chrystal.

One day as I waited on the Prince, I saw in the entry a very well behaved man, genteelly dressed. He was the more remarkable, as he had on a suit of superfine cloaths in the English fashion. The next time I waited upon the Prince, this man was sitting at the door upon a heavy clog of wood, to which he was chained by the neck. As the Prince was so far from hindering me to make inquiry, that he took all opportunities of encouraging me, I hesitated not to ask him the reason of treating a man so ignominiously. He said, that the late Field-marshal Prince Golitzin had made a present of him, when about nine years of age, to my Prince: That, as he esteemed the memory of his brother, he had spared no expence in making him master of writing and arithmetick; and that, as he was a Crim Tartar by birth, he had him baptised, and married to a very pretty, modest, young woman, by whom he had a numerous family. As he had done so much for him, he appointed him his factor over many villages, and that he had behaved very well till the Prince was sent from Peterburgh, when he imagined himself at liberty to act as he pleased, possibly expecting

pecting that the Empress would take the villages from the Prince : That a petition was sent to him some time ago, acquainting him, that this fellow had absolutely ruined some hundreds of people, and that, upon a fair inquiry, he found it was true : That by the laws of the country, he should be hanged, or, at least, sent to the galleys for life ; but that he would punish him in this manner. He said, that he had already appointed another factor, with orders to take every thing from this villain, and make restitution to the peasants as far as was possible.

He also had ordered a certain maintenance for his wife and children, with orders to have the children carefully educated ; but this fellow should undergo a severe whipping, and then to be sent to the villages, to write under the new factor, to whom orders were given to let no fault go unpunished ; and lastly, that if it was found out that he had not made a clear discovery of all the value he had, he would be sent to the galleys for life ; whereas, if he had made a clear discovery, he should remain in the village ; and, if he behaved well for the future, he had a chance of being again promoted, and freed from his chains.

C H A P. LI.

*A Continuation of what happened remarkable
in Taverhoff, early in the Summer 1748.*

AN old acquaintance Mr Rosen, a surgeon, designed for Asoph, arrived in Taverhoff. Mr Burman was unable to perform his duty in the hospital, and so very weak, that we could have no hopes of his living much longer. Mr Rosen and I had lived in great friendship. He used to interpret for me in the hospital at Petersburg, as he spoke Latin well, consequently no wonder I was glad to see him; I therefore, finding it not disagreeable to Mr Rosen, projected a scheme of getting him kept at Taverhoff. I applied to the Prince, representing the dangerous state of Mr Burman's health, and the impossibility of my attending the business of the hospital daily, and that of his great command, at the same time, only with the assistance of two mates. This had the desired effect, and Mr Rosen was appointed to attend the hospital, and this was soon confirmed by orders from the medicine-chancery and admiralty. It may appear scarcely credible, but it is nevertheless true, that I was greatly at a loss to speak Latin with Mr Rosen at our first meeting, frequently interlarding with it either Russian or German words.

words. After I had got an apartment in the palace, where the writers were employed daily, I applied myself to learn to read and write the Russian language, and it was altogether owing to this, that I was before so confused. I knew one Peter Miln, who had been nine years keeping the books for Mr Dimideof, belonging to his great iron-works in Siberia, and who, at his return to St Petersburg, could not speak English.

Mrs Luggar, a lieutenant's widow, arrived in Taverhoff from Asoph, in the latter end of August 1738, in her way to St Petersburg. Some days passed before I could speak English promptly, and without confounding it with other languages. At Asoph she had petitioned Admiral Bredal to pay her widow-money, which that base man denied, and she was in some distress. She was old, but insisted that she was marriageable, and capable of bearing children. I suppose she insisted upon this, that she might at once get a complete year's salary, viz. the sum of 290 rubles. I begged of her rather to acknowledge that she was superannuated, that she might get her widow-money paid yearly, which (as she had no thoughts of returning to England) would be a certainty as long as she lived, and great abundance in such a cheap country as this; but she insisted to have the large sum at once, for the before-mentioned reasons, and three years after that, I saw her in St Petersburg married

married a second time. In short, I used all my interest with the Prince, and succeeded in getting her money, and, at her desire, bought her a very convenient house, and did every other thing in my power to serve her; so glad was I of having one in the place with whom I could speak my native language.

This old woman had a daughter married in the neighbourhood to an officer. She also arrived in November to see her mother, and acquainted us, not without satisfaction, that her husband, a Russian, was dead, by whose death she had acquired a third of his estate, which was not great. It seems he had used her with great severity, but I suspect that there were faults on both sides. Mr Rosen made his addressee to her. As we ever lived in good friendship, he first made his proposals to me, and desired my assistance, providing I was not engaged with her. I assured him, I was already verbally engaged to another in St Petersburg, and, unless she married in my absence, I did not think myself at liberty to make suit to any other person. I declined giving him any counsel in an affair of such consequence; but, at the same time, offered my ready service to assist him, if he was fully resolved. He said he was; wherefore I assisted, and the marriage was soon consummated to the satisfaction of both parties.

In the beginning of the winter 1739, an accident happened at Veronits, which alarmed

the inhabitants of that city and all their neighbours, the mentioning of which, I doubt not, will be agreeable to the reader, because it lets us see what mischief may be produced from ignorance, or a mistake in time of the plague. A woman arrived in Veronits from some distance, but from a healthy place well attested. As she had come from a distance, she desired to use the bagnio, very customary among the Russians after much fatigue. After she had washed herself, and taken a plentiful supper, she slept in the hot-house. Next morning she was found dead! The landlord was obliged to acquaint the governor, before he durst bury her. The governor had sent off his only garrison-surgeon, some time before this, to assist the inhabitants of Paveloffke; consequently he had none to direct him in this affair. The field-apothecary lived in Veronits, to be near the army, and prepare medicines for all people in the service, in that neighbourhood. He had formerly been afflicted with the plague, and his wife had died of this disease the third time she was seized with it; which may be sufficient to undeceive those who imagine that the plague, like the small pox, afflict persons only once in their lives.

The governor having no other belonging to the medical affair, ordered the apothecary to visit the dead body, and report whatever was observable, and what was his opinion.

He

He did so, and reported that she had died of the plague, because she had a great buboe in one of her groins. Upon this the governor caused shut the city, and declare it unclean, denying any intercourse between the inhabitants and those of other parts: At the same time, he sent an express to Taverhoff, to acquaint the Prince of the misfortunate condition of the inhabitants of Veronits, requiring the assistance of a surgeon from thence. In return, the Prince expressed his sorrow for their misfortune, but would not allow any of his medical people to go to their assistance, because he was uncertain how soon we might be in the same condition, advising him to send for proper assistance to Moscow, and discharging him to send any more to Taverhoff. It happened that same day in the evening, that two surgeon's mates, in their way from Moscow to the army, demanded admittance into the city, which the soldier upon duty denied, acquainting them of their miserable condition.

The mates intended to have gone round the city to the next village, for fresh horses, rejoicing that they could so easily escape such danger; but an officer was upon duty, and being informed what they were, demanded that they should wait at the gate till the governor was made acquainted; telling them, that they probably would be obliged to return, if they went further. The governor was very glad

glad to converse with such people, demanded their immediate attendance in his house; and acquainted them with what he knew, had done, and what he dreaded. They said, that they never had seen that disease, but acknowledged that they had read about it, and that they also had heard several lectures by Dr Blumentrose, physician, by the Great Hospital in Moscow, concerning it, and the various methods of cure. In short, the governor desired them to take their repose, and next morning cause the body be taken out of the grave, inspect it very carefully, and make an accurate report of whatever they might discover. They did so; found the buboe; but, making a stricter search than the apothecary had done, found out other symptoms, which determined them to report that the woman had not the smallest sign of the plague, but that the buboe and some other symptoms were venereal, and that the woman had been suffocated in the bagnio, an event which is not alarming, and which frequently happens in Russia, from the carelessness of the people who heat it, and close it up before the coals are thoroughly burnt to charcoal. They also observed, that the buboe was completely suppurated, a circumstance which could not have happened, if she had been infected with the plague, especially as they had opened the buboe, and declared it was full of well concocted matter.

This

This their report gave universal joy to the city and the adjacent country ; but the poor apothecary was much and justly exposed, for his ignorance and presumption.

C H A P. LII.

A Continuation of the same Subject.

FOUR officers had been appointed by Admiral Bredal to superintend the works at Ikorits, before Prince Golitzin arrived ; three of them were Russians, and the other a German. It seems the Russians had let from the work, under pretence of sickness, &c. the peasants, who were sent from different provinces to assist in getting vessels ready for the use of the army. They had taken money from each peasant, to the value of some rubles, in order to let them go home. This undoubtedly was a very great crime in Russia, where no perquisites whatever are allowed, except their salary, servants, provision, rations, and forage, according to their ranks. By the articles of war, crimes of this nature are punishable by death.

The German had, as he told me, taken only two or three men to assist in making a coach for him : These were their crimes. Admiral Bredal, an excessively proud man, having been made acquainted with these affairs, sent

sent for them, and, I was assured, designed only to chide them : He did so ; but one named Chiricoff, a lieutenant, a very rich man, and every whit as proud as his commander, could not bear the admiral's taunts : He very unseasonably retorted with a great deal of virulence : The consequence was, that Chiricoff was arrested, and a court-martial convened to judge of this affair. He was found guilty, and, not willing to suffer alone, he accused the others, who were also found guilty. Sentence of death was passed upon them all. They had remained under arrest, upon half pay, three years, and doubted not but they would get a pardon, as Chiricoff was of an honourable family, and had great alliances : But they could not agree among themselves; and, as they only saw one another at church, they were foolish enough to scold there. Captain Russelius was importuned by the priests to represent this, which he could not deny. He not only represented it, but also begged that the admiralty would either order them to Petersburg, or free him from any accusation which might be brought against him for not keeping better order, which he affirmed was not in his power. In answer to this, the ultimate sentence was sent, confirmed by the Empress, commanding that they, without loss of time, should be brought to the parade, and there have their swords broken over their heads by the hands of the hangman,

hangman, and he declared infamous; that they should be shackled, and sent, under a guard to Oranburgh, to the galleys for life; and lastly, that all their estates and other riches should be forfeited to the Empress. This sentence was soon put in execution; but, by the humanity of the captain, not with the greatest rigour, for horses, carriages, cloaths, and many other things, were let go for the use of their wives and relations. At the same time, some writers, who have no rank in the army, were severely whipt and sent to the galleys, because they knew, and did not discover, the villainy of the officers.

At this time also an affair happened, which put me in a great fright, and was the cause of laughter to the Prince and others. The archbishop of Veronits was taken ill of a fever, wrote to the Prince, and begged that he would send me to give the apothecary directions how to cure him. I had been bad for a long time of a tertian ague and bloody flux, which, though something better, had reduced my strength very much. The Prince came into my room, told me of the archbishop's sickness and desire, but at the same time said, that, though scarcely any thing could give him greater pleasure than to be obliging to the bishop, yet he would not desire me to go, unless I thought I could do it with safety. Not being able to deny that good man any thing, I consented, and sent to Mr Chiricoff
for

for the loan of his large fur-coat, to defend me from the cold. It was at my return from Veronits, that I heard the sentence was to be put in execution next day. I was much afraid, when I was told that every thing was to be taken from them, that my having borrowed his furred coat, might have been interpreted much to my disadvantage, especially as it was very costly, the fur alone being sable ; therefore, without loss of time, I sent it to his house, and then expressed my fears to the secretary, who laughed at me, as did every one who heard of it, saying, that if I had kept it, tho' all the courts in Peterburgh had known, it would not have been looked upon as any way criminal, as I had got it before the sentence was publicly declared : However, the satisfaction I had in the quietness and peace of my mind, was, I think to this day, much preferable to it, if it had been of far greater value.

When the Prince staid at Shilofske, I used, after I had visited my patients, frequently to divert myself with my fowling-piece upon the banks of the rivers Don and Veronits : One day I came up to a man who was fishing, and, asking him what sport he had got, and talking with him, I understood that he was blind, had lost his right leg and thigh, and his left foot ; being a poor young peasant, I gave him some money, and desired that he would give me an account of the cause and cure. He said,
that

that some years ago he was taken ill of a violent fever, that these members already named had dropt from him; lastly, that he at the same time had lost his sight, but that God was his only doctor. He said the neighbours had kept him clean, and had applied to the ulcerated parts only the leaves of green kail, or bur-dock, made soft before the fire: That, after he had recovered his health, he got a small boat, and used to go to fish with his neighbours; but that now, he was so well acquainted with the banks of the Veronits, that he frequently went some miles from the village, and was the principal fisher in it, by which he had got a very good livelihood; as for riches, he despised them. I mention this to let people see that nature, when left to herself, sometimes makes incredible cures; and I imagine it may be of use to intelligent honest surgeons, to be very careful how and when they perform operations; for, in the course of my practice, I have known people lost by ignorant daring surgeons.

I shall give an instance of nature's having performed a cure, when the patient would have been lost if another method had been taken, and this may be of use to all my readers. It was this: A sailor was brought to the hospital. He was very feverish, an *erysipelas* had spread over the skin of the *penis* and *scrotum*, as far as the *os pubis*. Every thing was done, which art hitherto recommends, to

no purpose. Mr Rosen and I called for the advice of Mr Frish at Veronits, a gentleman who had successfully performed many operations; the more dangerous, the readier he was to perform; consequently he gave his advice immediately to amputate all the affected parts, to which I made the following objections: 1^{mo}, That the *erysipelas* had spread above the *os pubis*, and how deep it went, none could possibly say. 2^{do}, That his fever was extremely high, and consequently none could justly say how far the whole mass of blood was contaminated with the erysipelatous cause; and that daily experience shewed, that in such diseases a wound inflicted upon a sound part generally translated the *erysipelas* to the wounded part, and sometimes left the former diseased part altogether. This could not be denied, because we frequently found the *erysipelas* next day affecting strongly the member which had been bled. But lastly, a ring, of a brown colour, run quite round, and circumscribed the *erysipelas* from the sound skin, which I took to be a sure sign of a separation; and consequently, that, if nature's intention was now interrupted, it would undoubtedly cause the man's death. Mr Frish was of a different opinion, and was base enough, privately, to asperse my character, by saying, that if the man should lose his life, it was owing to my obstinacy. I soon got notice of this.

And

And having been warned, I doubled my diligence, and had the satisfaction to complete the cure. The skin of the *penis* and *scrotum* were quite lost, yet nature surrounded the testicles and *penis* with a callosity to admiration; and, though the testicles were strained, yet he was completely cured, and begot children, which I prognosticated to his wife, when she used to visit him.

The consequence of this cure was to me very agreeable. Mr Frish, understanding that I was for satisfaction, came to the hospital when I was there, and, before many of our officers, begged pardon, and acknowledged that he did not think that he was cureable, and believed that the operation was the only cure; but now was convinced of the contrary. Be that as it may, Mr Frish certainly suffered much in his reputation, though not undeservedly.

It was in August when we arrived in the pleasant village Shilofske, and consequently very hot weather; the soil is dry, rather inclining to sandy. It was towards the evening when we arrived, and I arrived in my travelling-waggon, where I slept the first night, or rather designed to take my rest, for my eyes were not shut one hour the whole night, occasioned by an innumerable quantity of fleas, which forced me at last, with others, to get up and walk about, among whom was the Prince's eldest son Prince Alexander, the

the same who was lately ambaffador at the Court of London. We were assured that the defart, every summer, was in the same condition ; but that where many people lodged together, or encamped, their numbers very soon decreased, and we found this to prove true at Shilofske.

We again returned to Taverhoff in the latter end of September, the good Prince having recovered, to the unfeigned joy of his own family, and all the good people who had the happiness to be acquainted with him. He reassumed his command, which was like to have run into confusion, when he was sick.

A gentleman of the name of Ismaeloff, of an antient family and great possessions, was sent to Taverhoff, it was said, by the desire of his relations. He was but weak and vain, a great lover of game, and consequently every villain could make a bait for him : He was good natured, and therefore not dangerous. He was a relation to the Prince, and his Lady a near relation to the Princess royal Elisabeth, afterwards Empress of Russia. This gentleman kept a large pack of hounds, many grey-hounds, and other kinds of dogs. He was only a lieutenant, but the Prince appointed under him proper mid-ship-men, who transacted the affairs of the Empire without blemish. Mr Ismaeloff rejoiced in nothing so much as obliging every one as far as he could. He hunted frequently, and, not only

only made every one welcome to partake of that diversion, but regaled them sumptuously, and looked upon them as his friends. When the weather would not permit of hunting, we might ever meet with some agreeable diversion in Mr Ismaeloff's house, providing only that it happened to be none of his drinking days, which were very frequent. Every pleasant summer-day, we either went a-hunting, fishing, fowling, or playing, and drinking our tea at the side of a wood, or on the banks of a river, in the afternoons only; and in this manner I passed two years, as it were in paradise, except only when I was sick. The good Prince never failed to honour us with his presence, when affairs permitted, and when he could not, the Princess and a coachful or two of his children were partners of our innocent diversions.

There are many wolves and bears about Taverhoff, and the inhabitants have different ways of catching them; as a relation of this kind may be agreeable to some of my readers, take what follows. The bear is killed with a piece of sharp steel fixed on the end of a short strong pole, and a club armed with a heavy piece of iron: When they have roused the bear, he makes a brisk attack, instantly the peasant gets on his knee, and fixes his pole on the ground, keeping the sharp steel pointed to the bear, who, not observing, or else little afraid of the pole, rushes on to the man, who directs

directs the steel so, as to pierce his breast, and then with one blow of his armed club on the head, dispatches him at once. I have been told that they are so fond of bear-hunting, that, though it is attended with great danger, they very carefully will go to kill them, without acquainting any of their neighbours. Another way is with strong nets in the woods, and the musquet. A third way is more curious, and not dangerous: They take a large door, into which they drive many pieces of iron made very sharp, and standing some inches above the wood, into the middle of this they fix a living pig, which squeaks the whole night, then they cover all over with grass or reeds. When the bear hears the pig, he makes all the haste he can to seize his prey; but when he jumps on the door, the sharp irons, being bearded, run into his feet, then he turns himself on his back, and continues to roll and roar with the door above him, till the hunter next morning dispatches him. There are many fierce wolves about Taverhoff in the winter season, which they kill, by tying a living pig to the end of a sledge with a long rope; two men sit in the sledge well armed with guns loaded with slug-shot. They drive their horse by some wood, and then throw out the pig which makes a loud noise, at which the wolves come out, and, endeavouring to seize their prey, are dispatched with the fowling-pieces, but the shot renders the fur of small value

value. Two accidents happened when I was in Taverhoff, which deserve to be mentioned.

An old sailor used to get a dead horse, or a piece of one, and carry it to the desert, into the middle of which he fixed a stick ; he then planted two or three loaded guns, pointed to the stick, in such a manner, that if any thing moved the horse, the motion, by the help of small cords, drew the triggers. One morning, as the sailor went to see what kind of game he had got, he spied from a distance something very bulky, and, though it was frost, when the boars don't roam abroad, yet he imagined it could be nothing else. Gladly he run to the part, but soon was undeceived. It was a man who had lost his way, having been the worse of drink, and seeing something black among the snow, went and sat down to take a rest, where he was wounded by nine flugs. The poor man was cured, but the sailor, after a long confinement, was discharged such diversion ever after. Two soldiers belonging to the garrison of Veronits, lovers of sport, went one night, according to custom, to some hay-ricks with a pig ; an old large cunning wolf appeared, but did not run straight to the pig ; after running about them some time, he jumped upon the head of one of the soldiers, and very soon would have devoured him, had not the other, who was very near him, shot him dead, which he did without wounding the man.

If

If a man has only a few houses of his own, though he may be ever so rich, he, (not as here) dare not assume the title of gentleman; he is only a peasant of the better sort, and called *odna dvoretz*, which signifies in English, one house. One of these peasants lived in the neighbourhood of Taverhoff, he was extremely obliging : One winter-day, he begged of the Prince to permit his children to go and see his method of fishing, which was granted, and I made one of the party. After we had got a homely repast in his house, we went to a pleasant lake about three miles long, but not half a mile broad, where we frequently used to divert ourselves in the summer season, by fishing, shooting, gathering strawberries and different kinds of fruit growing on the banks, and this *odna dvoretz* supplied us with cream in abundance. Thither we went with a light, and well armed, for fear of wolves ; the peasant cut a circular hole through the ice, and, causing the light to be held near it, with a net in the form of a large laddle, he took as many fish as he pleased, such as perches, pike, tench, and carp. In short, he loaded two sledges in less than an hour. This relation may surprise some at first reading, but the fact is so well known, that, in Russia, the peasants have no readier way of catching fish for their use ; and they say, which is most reasonable, that the fish

swim from afar to the hole, directed by the light, for the benefit of fresh air.

After this manner we lived in Taverhoff, till the middle of October, when orders arrived to the Prince, acquainting him of the peace, and commanding him to cause lay up all stores, and vessels already built, or near finished, under shades, to appoint proper officers to take notice of every thing left; finally to dismiss his command, make his repair to St Petersburg, and take a seat in the senate and admiralty. This was agreeable news to us all. I looked upon Petersburg, as I would have done upon London; and now all people were employed to get every thing ended: But the Prince never would leave any thing half done, which caused us to remain in Taverhoff till February 1740, when we were thinking to set out in two or three days for St Petersburg. One morning I went into the Princess's chamber, and was not a little surprised to see her weeping, and in so much sorrow that she could not speak one word. I had not been there three minutes, till the Prince entered, dressed only in his morning gown; and, pointing to the Princess, smiled, tho' he was also grieved, and said, observe Fatiana, for that was the Princess's name, how she grieves for what can not be helped, since it is agreeable to God and the government.

He said, that about midnight a courier arrived, with orders for him to make his repair

to Astrachan, and govern that kingdom till further orders ; he then threw his gown about me, and said, it grieved him most that he was obliged to send me to St Petersburg, and especially at this time, when three of his children were sick, and the Princess not well recovered from the effects of a petechial fever, she had near lost her life by. To which I answered, that, if I should not be reckoned a deserter, I would go with him and his family to any part upon earth ; but that I would desire to be sent from Astrachan to St Petersburg when he arrived, by which means neither the admiralty nor medicine chancery could blame me ; because, as we were to proceed very fast, I could return by post, as soon as I was obliged by the camshicks, or ordinary way of marching, which is at the rate of 50 versts in three days, agreeable to Peter the Great's regulations.

My ready answer gave them both great satisfaction. Econtra his adjutant, whom he had, from a maker of barrels, made an officer, denied to go further than Pavelofske ; but the Prince eased him of that trouble, and not only excused him, but granted liberty and time enough to go and spend some days with his relations, before he should arrive in St Petersburg.

We lost no time in getting every thing ready, and left Taverhoff on the 10th of February 1748, and next morning reached to Novopavelofske,

wopavelofske, where there are some thousands of men constantly employed in making and repairing small arms for the army. An accident happened here, which I shall very briefly relate.

The commandant, who was only a major, came to pay his respects to the Prince, and demanded his orders. I was walking in the lobby till breakfast was ready; my furred coat, and the rest of my dress, were the same as that of the Prince's sons; for every year I got from the Princess two complete suits of cloaths, one for the winter and the other for summer. He came up to me, and asked, if the Prince was to be seen? I said he was, and shewed him the door: He then in a most submissive manner asked me, What my rank in the army was? I told him: He then in a most despicable manner said, Is that all! and moved off. As there were none present, I hesitated not to acquaint him, that he certainly was a mushroom sprung from froth. He went into the room however, without returning any answer; from this I was certain, that he either was no gentleman, or if he was, he had had none of the genteel education which the Russians bestow upon their children with such care. I was not mistaken. A servant warned me to go to breakfast; when I entered the room, the Prince was sitting taking a dish of coffee, at some distance from the table; My commandant was standing at the door,

door, a sure sign that he was no gentleman : The Princess and her children were sitting at the table. When I had shut the door, I made a very low bow to my major, and begged to know his rank; at which the noble family all stared, well knowing it was not my custom to be impertinently inquisitive to strangers. The major, not a little disconcerted, answered pitifully enough, that he was a major and commandant of the city; to which I replied, *Is that all !* it is undoubtedly for want of a better, turned round with an air of importance, and took my place at the table. The whole family were greatly embarrassed to keep from laughter ; but they were soon freed of all restraint, for I only began to tell what passed in the lobby, when my major made a low bow, and suddenly departed ; but before he left the house, he must have heard a very hearty laugh, and, no doubt, he knew it was at his expence. I never could put up with vain, empty, self-sufficient fools, but continually took all opportunities to humble them.

The Prince said, that he was a gentleman, but that their family was scarcely known, and therefore remained in a state of old ignorance; and that he believed this major was the greatest military rank belonging to his family. Thus we travelled on, night and day briskly, through the same villages I mentioned in my journey to Kotchatoff, till we arrived upon the line which reacheth from the Don to the river

river Volga. Before I describe this line, I must mention two little accidents, which happened to me betwixt Pavelofske and the line.

The first was, the Princess sometimes desired that I should sit upon the forepart of the sledge in which she and the Prince were, in order to pass the time. When we had left Pavelofske, I went into a very large sledge to visit two of the sick children; it was very warm; and, whilst I was talking with them and the nurses, the sledge went off; they advised me to sit still, to which I had no objection; accordingly we proceeded to the next village, without the smallest accident: But, when I came to the Prince and Princess, they seemed to be surpris'd, telling me, that they thought I had been lost, as none knew where I was. The Prince had on the way dispatch'd back an express to Novopavelofske, to see what was become of me; but they said it was a good scheme to go into the sick-sledge.

One fine frosty day we arriv'd in a village situated high on the banks of the Don. As we were to stay a few hours here, the servants and other idle people poured water on the side of the hill, which instantly froze like glass; they then, men and women, upon the bark of trees, slid'd down the hill. This is a diversion which the Russians are very fond of; the Princess went out to see it, and I accompanied her. After we had looked on a while, she desired that I would try it alone, for some times

times three, or even four, can either sit or stand on the bark, but then they are often overfet, and this occasions laughter, especially among the women, when what they commonly take great pains to hide, is exposed to public view.

They were so fond of the diversion, that, the winter I was employed in the hospitals in St Petersburg, I was informed the Empress Ann caused make a hill of snow for it; and that Prince Courakin, the same who was some time envoy at the Court of Great Britain, who at that time was master of horse, and used to take great liberties in order to divert the Empress: He frequently sat upon a small sledge, and took some of the ladies upon his knee; but when the velocity of the sledge, at the foot of the hill, was so diminished as not to endanger hurting the ladies, he then fell off with his fair partner, to the mirth of the bystanders; but the ladies were dressed in long linen drawers, so that their modesty was not hurt. At the Princess's desire, I sat down on the middle of a large piece of bark; and, as I was not acquainted with such exercises, I through ignorance placed my legs also upon the bark: Thus equipped, I was gently pushed off, and, though I did not fall off, the bark turned so frequently round, that it exhibited to the skilful spectators much mirth. At last, my bark being very smooth, and I unskilful, not able to direct it, carried me forward into
a pit,

a pit, from whence the people used to fetch water. This unforeseen accident soon turned their mirth into the other extreme. I however went down unhurt, and it being all frozen over, except a small hole, I was in no danger; therefore, considering how merry they had been at my expence, in my turn I had the satisfaction to divert myself at their fright; I lay still, not visible by them, and observed many, in their hurry, to help me, lying on the side of the hill, overturned in so many different shapes, that, at another time, it would have exhibited a scene of laughter to all spectators. At last, when they came near me, I arose, and left my vehicle for them to carry back at my return. The Princess said, she never would again desire me to make proof of my readiness to oblige her at such a risk, which indeed she was ignorant of.

We at last arrived on the west end of this much famed line, which runs betwixt the rivers Don and Volga, a work of the great Peter's, fit only for such a Prince to have made. It is a ditch and rampart reaching the whole length of 60 versts; the ditch is 20 yards broad, well formed, and proportionably deep. The rampart is very high, and the south side, towards the Kalmucks (commonly called Calmucks in other authors) country, or the desert of Astrachan, is planted with high and strong pallisadoes made of fir-trees, drove into the ground, and fastened together with cross-beams,

beams, so close, that a man cannot get thro' any where, except, I think, at two places, through which brooks of water run, and these are fortified as far as art hath hitherto been able. There are four strong forts built upon this line at equal distances, well stored with cannon, and betwixt the forts are many houses, where soldiers only live. Centinel-boxes are placed on the top of the wall, the whole length, so near one another, that the soldiers on duty can almost speak together. The names of the forts from the west end to the east, are called in the same order, viz. Donskaja, Oskor, Graczi, Meczotnaja, and Tfaritzin, in other authors falsely called Carizyn.

The design of building this line, is to restrain the incursions of the Kalmucks into the Empire of Russia, and, although it has the effect of curbing great bodies, yet small parties have made their way thro' where the brooks run, and done very considerable damage, as will be taken notice of in course of my travels. We reached that castle called Oskor, about seven at night, and as the horses were very tired, and no change to be got here, we were obliged to take our lodging in the castle. Except the captain's apartment, who was commandant of the castle, there was no other private clean room in it; this being destined for the Prince and his family, I could get none, unless I would sleep in the guard-room, which was very large, but as full of men as it could
flow,

flow, and I imagine this was the coldest night I had ever experienced in my life. I staid in the Prince's apartment till bed-time, and as it was excessively cold after supper, I took a little more wine than I used to do, to comfort me, but notwithstanding all my care, when I went to the door, it was intolerable. I then returned into the guard-room; but though it was warm enough, when I viewed the number of people of all sorts, I by no means thought of making one of their company: I therefore ordered my servant to get ready two bottles of boiling water to be put to my feet, and a wax candle to be lighted in my sledge, and when all was ready to let me know. He did so, and I went as quickly as I was able, had my boots taken off, laid myself down under good fur covers, having a good furred gown wrapped close with a sash on my body, and a warm furred cap on my head, yet I really imagined that I would have been frozen to death this night; for after my servant had buckled the cover of the sledge fast, and retired, had I so designed, I would not have been able to get out again without help. In this condition, I put out the candle, and still with my feet at the bottles of water which comforted me not a little, I fell asleep, and slept sound, till eight next morning, when I was roused from sleep by being overturned amongst the snow, as my driver was passing down a steep
O o hill :

hill : Nor did I hear the cannon which were discharged at their governor's departure. I was in a great sweat ; but the men were not long before they had replaced all my affairs, and put me to bed ; where I remained in pretty good condition till I arrived in Tfaritzin.

The city Tfaritzin is neat and very compact, the streets well laid out, but the houses are all of timber ; it is surrounded with a deep dry ditch and high ramparts with bastions, well stored with great cannon. At Mr Cultzoff's the commandant, an old colonel, very serious desire, the Prince remained here till next morning, when we set out, and the day thereafter, arriving at Tchornajar, or black-hill, we travelled now on the Volga. Tchornajar is distant from Tfaritzin 112 versts, and from Astrachan 300. It is but a small town, fortified in the same manner as Tfaritzin, but they have not so many cannon. The Prince, having been informed that the ice below this town was not good, resolved to go hence in the morning, that he might pass this dangerous place in day-light. The city stands on a high ground, that they may see far into the desert, lest the Kal-mucks, who inhabit this country, make some sudden attack upon them. I shall describe these people afterwards. Next morning, we departed, escorted by 300 Cossacks and a party of dragoons ; the way from the town to the river is very steep, and it was my lot,
at

at this time, to have a pair of very good young horses in my sledge, I was also in the rear : Whether the sledge had bore hard upon the horses, or the report of the cannon had frightened them, I know not, but they ran off, and my driver fell from his box, and left the horses at their own will; my servant also slipped off from behind. The horses galloped on, and had almost overturned the sledge in which the Prince was. He, according to his former goodness, immediately gave orders to the dragoons and Cossacks to endeavour to get betwixt my sledge and a piece of the Volga on the west side, not frozen, about a mile or two long. My sledge was unbuckled on the right side, looking to that unfrozen part of the Volga. I saw it, but knew not what to do, I attempted to get hold of a pistol, in order to shoot one of the horses, but they ran very swiftly; the ice was by no means smooth, many boards lying one upon another, being frozen together, made me imagine that, as I hoped, I should be overturned, and consequently prevented my getting a pistol; at last, I spied the horsemen get betwixt me and the water, who, with their whips and cries forced the horses to run towards the east shore, which gave me hopes that I should at least escape drowning : At last, a gallant Cossack, upon a swift horse, got hold of one of the reins of the horse in the shafts, and, by a sudden jerk, threw down that horse; any
may

may easily imagine, that I made what haste I could to get out of the sledge, but was surpris'd, when out, that with great difficulty I could either stand or walk, a tremor, which had seized me, was so violent : But whether this proceeded from fear, to which I never was remarkably subject, or the irregular diversity of motions, I shall not say ; but the tremor continued more than twenty four hours, and such a tremor I never experienced either before or since, though I at fundry times, have been in as great danger, as will be seen in the sequel. Nothing further remarkable happened in this journey, till we arriv'd all safe in Astrachan, which we did on the fifth of March.

C H A P. LIII.

A description of the City and Kingdom of Astrachan, &c.

THE city of Astrachan is built upon an island called the island of Hares, that island lying east and west, having the famous river Volga on its north side, it makes a pretty appearance to strangers at their arrival from Russia ; because they have a view of its length, and the steeples of all its churches with a very high brick wall, which surrounds both it and its citadel : Mr Hanway has
been

been misinformed. He says, it contains about 70,000 inhabitants. It certainly contains many more than an hundred thousand, but this in Russia, is not to be certainly known, as they keep no register of women and very young children. The city is in latitude 46 degrees 13 minutes, and 68 degrees east longitude. The citadel is built upon the west end of the city on a hill, the wall surrounding it is of brick, 30 feet high at least, and very thick, having many high strong bastions, mounted with a great number of large cannon : But it is not a regular fortification, though strong enough for any enemy in that country : Astrachan lieth 60 versts from the Caspian sea: In it are contained magazines of all kinds, the governor's and archbishop's palaces, the government's chancery where all affairs, civil and military, are judged of, and all the records are kept. The metropolitan church, a large monastery, all built with white freestone, guard-house, and several other buildings, are within the walls of the citadel: There are only three gates into the citadel, one from the city, another from the south opening into the Tartar suburbs, a third from the north towards the Volga. The wall of the city takes its beginning from the north east corner of the citadel, and runs eastward three quarters of a mile, then turns south a quarter of a mile, and proceeds from the south east corner west,

till

till it again joins the south-east corner of the citadel. There are only three gates looking towards the river, one only to the east, and two to the south. Like the citadel, it has many bastions mounted with cannon, but not built in a regular way.

On the inside of the walls, betwixt them and the houses, there is a void space, where none are allowed to build 20 fathoms broad, quite round the city. There are three long streets from east to west, and many cross-streets intersecting the former three. There are within the walls two large stone churches, and one of wood. I think the length of the city and citadel is equal to an English mile. The houses are built with timber, and the streets are laid over with timber also, so that a fire happening in this city must be very dangerous. The suburbs are many, and extend wide: They contain many more inhabitants than the city. There are two churches on the east, and a large monastery of stone, one wooden church on the south, and one betwixt the river and city on the north, all for those of the Greek persuasion; besides which, the reformed have one built with timber, the Romans have a monastery, and the Armenians have a fine church, these two are built of stone.

The hospitals are built without the suburbs on the east, beside the large monastery, both for the army and fleet, though the admiralty
is

is built on the west end of the citadel, inclosed with a deep ditch and rampart, with bastions mounted with cannon. The Russian and Armenian merchants inhabit the eastern suburbs, the Russians only the south and north, but the ancient Tartar inhabitants live in the suburbs next to the admiralty. Within the city none of the Tartars are permitted to live, and they are forced to evacuate the city every evening before sun-set; if they are found in it after that time, they are sent to a guard-house, there being one at every gate, and next morning are severely whipped on the bare back.

The Indians, and some Armenians, are permitted to live in two spacious caravanse-ras, which have only two ports, at which guards are kept day and night; they are inclosed with high stone walls.

The kingdom of Astrachan on the south is confined by Circassia, and 44 degrees 10 minutes north latitude, on the west by 62 degrees 30 minutes east longitude, on the north by 52 degrees north latitude, and on the east by 69 degrees east longitude, as they compute; for the inhabitants have no certain knowledge of the extent of this great kingdom to the east, possibly it may reach to the Jaik river, or further.

C H A P. LIV.

Being an Account of the Jaik river inhabitants, and a relation of what passed there, with some Anecdotes which the Author was informed of from creditable People, &c.

BEFORE I treat of what properly concerns Astrachan, I thought it would be agreeable to the reader, to be informed of the nations which live on the confines of that kingdom. The Cossacks inhabit the Don on the east. -- Circassia is on the south, an account of which I shall give in the course of my travels, when I arrive in that country. The kingdom of Cazan, and part of Siberia, bound Astrachan on the north, but to the east, as I said before, the inhabitants are ignorant of their proper limits, it being all desert, except the forts of Ilek, Borodinskoi, and Orenburgh, which properly belong to the province of Ufimskaja.

The river Jaik takes its rise in very different parts, both south and north. I shall describe its course from the north. Streams run from the mountains and lakes in Ufimskaja in the north latitude of 54 degrees 20 minutes, and 79 degrees east longitude ; it continues its course south-east through a vast desert, and disembogues itself into the Caspian sea, south-south-

south-east from the city of Astrachan, distant about 140 versts. At the distance of 2 or 300 versts north from the mouth of this river, there is a large strong town, which a colony of Don's Cossacks built, and at present inhabit; they called it Jaik after the river. It seems that they hitherto have bravely defended themselves against all the different Tartar tribes which surround them. Betwixt Astrachan city and Tsaritzin and the river Jaik, till you arrive at the town Jaik, there is not one fixed inhabited place. This vast desert, nevertheless, is inhabited by different hoards of wild Tartars, which annoy their civilized neighbours very much. They who roam next the Caspian are called Karakalpaaks, and they who roam to the north of the Karakalpaaks are called Kirgees and Baskeers, they are said to profess the Mahomedan religion: Many broils yearly happen betwixt them and the Kalmucks, nor is it in the power of Russia to prevent this, although, as shall be hereafter explained, they are at no small charges and trouble to keep peace amongst them.

The Kirgees and Baskeers, in the latter end of the year 1739, being Mahomedans, and understanding that the Russians carried on a bloody war against their brethren the Turks, without the smallest provocation, fell suddenly upon the open and defenceless villages in the south of Umfimafoskaja province, murdered all the very old people who unluckily

fell in their way, together with the infants, and carried with them all the young people of both sexes, proposing, either to keep them for slaves, or else sell them to others.

They could not have perpetrated such villainy in a worse time for themselves. Vasilie Nikititch Tatishoff was governor in Orenburg, a man, though I cannot commend his morals, as fit to treat with such barbarians as any one in Russia, of whom I shall have occasion to say more afterwards. This governor, who had his spies every where, soon, not only got notice of the horrid depredations the Kirgees had committed, but certain advice where they were; and that they were living at all ease, void of care, and quite indifferent about what they had been doing. He presently dispatched 5000 regular troops, and 3000 Cossacks, under able commanders, with proper instructions. They marched with all secrecy, and, although the Kirgees were said to be upwards of 20,000 fighting men strong, the Russians fell on them in a morning, and made a terrible slaughter; few got away. The Russians, who were with them, obtained their liberty, and the Kirgee and Baskeer women and children were, in their turn, made prisoners; for the Russians killed none, but such as were able to carry arms.

This relation I had from a surgeon of dragoons, who was in the action, and had four male and female children for his share; he said,

that he might have got 100, if he could have maintained them. He told me, that they were much pinched for want of provisions for such a number of people in the desert: That the foldiers have been known to sell either a boy or a girl for a pinch of snuff; and Mr Tatishoff, afterwards governor of Astrachan, confirmed this relation, which Mr Chenmitzer, for that was the surgeon's name, had told me. Since that terrible massacre, they never more were heard of, so long as I staid in Russia.

I said, that the Cossacks had first found out that fine river Jaik, and built a town to which they gave the name of the river. They fortified it strongly, so as to become respected by the strongest hoards of Tartars, and, of course, they were a good barrier to the Russian dominions. They acquired great riches by fishing and hunting, but fishing was their principal staple, which, when they had cured, they carried by water to Astrachan, and sold them there to be sent to Russia.

Before Peter the Great's time, though the Volga abounded with the best fish in the world, fishing was of no benefit to the crown. A poor peasant, named Demidioff, whom I was intimately acquainted with, when he was very rich: He could neither read nor write, yet he began that useful branch of commerce: He improved it so much, that when Peter was in Astrachan the first time, he sent for him,

him, who told the Emperor all his schemes, and made it evident to his penetrating genius, that, if he had a small sum of money, he was in condition to make this one of the best branches of trade in Astrachan. The Great Peter ordered him 20,000 rubles, and gave him all encouragement, prohibiting any to molest him in any shape. In a few years thereafter, Demidioff paid off the Emperor's money, and had many vessels of burden on the Volga. When I was there, he had ships of 200 tons trading to Persia, and was esteemed one of the richest merchants in Astrachan.

The fishing became so respectable, that taxations were laid upon it, before I arrived there, and a cantoir was erected to take care that they were duly collected; over and above this, the crown seized upon the ichthyocola, and all kind of glew. Many years after this, the court got notice, that, in a short time, the Jaik fishery would even vie with that of Astrachan, and resolved to establish a cantoir in Jaik, in the same manner as they had done in Astrachan: In consequence of this, proper officers and writers were dispatched to Jaik. (This happened about the time of my arrival.) When they arrived, they sent for the Cossacks, and declared to them the Imperial decree, probably in a haughty threatening manner. The Cossacks stared at this, and urged that they had first found out this river; that they paid as much as any of the Don Cossacks, from whom they

were sprung ; that they were always true and faithful to the Empire ; that they had, by great labour and expence, built this town, and had defended themselves against all their neighbouring Tartar enemies, without the assistance of Russia, at a very great expence of their blood ; and lastly, that, if it were not for fear of them, even Orenburgh would be in no small danger from the great Tartar Prince Jean-beck-bater, who was able to assemble an army of 100,000 fighting men easily, and who had often put Orenburgh in no small fright, notwithstanding their formidable garrison, &c. These were their principal reasons ; but, to such high lords, they signified nothing, and they insisted, not only to levy the taxes proposed, but also forthwith to have a respectable garrison established there.

This was a bitter pill, and so very nauseous, that that very night they summoned a council of the Cossacks, and determined not to swallow it. Next morning, they waited upon these new-comers, and sent them headlong into the other world, by drowning them in the river. Several expresses were dispatched after that from Petersburg, to know what could be the reason they never had received any report from Jaik. The Cossacks sent them all the same way. At last, Mr Tatishoff was employed to find out what was become of the commissioners : He indeed got notice that they were all drowned ; but, at
the

the same time, advised the court to take no further notice of it, till the country was better peopled, and a few forts built about them. And thus this affair ended to the satisfaction of the Cossacks. Certainly a government knows very little of sound policy, if they think it a good scheme to oppress borderers.

Men, who think they are unreasonably oppressed, will not fail, upon all occasions, to take the first opportunity they meet with, to shake themselves free of their oppressors, even at the risk of life and liberty. How much blood the Romans, English, and Scots, have lost, only to maintain their liberty, every person knows, or may be informed of by history : And we have frequently seen, from very small beginnings, that many governments have been quite overturned, and much blood and treasure lost, by the ill-founded schemes of a weak, or wicked administration.

CH A P. LV.

What happened at our first coming to Astrachan.

HAVING in some measure cleared the way, and made the reader acquainted with the neighbourhood of Astrachan, I propose to let him know what is worthy of notice at the Prince's arrival. He was within three or four miles of the city, when many officers,

officers, and the principal inhabitants of the city, to the number of some hundreds, approached him, and, on the ice, which was very bad, paid their compliments to him, which he, in the most obliging manner, peculiar to himself, returned as he passed on.

They then returned behind the governor's *suite*, and so drove on to the city. When he entered under the principal port, the cannon began there, and were fired off quite round the city and citadel. When he entered the citadel, he was there received by the guards under arms, who paid their compliments with their arms, drums, and music. He next arrived at the governor's palace, and there was saluted by his own proper guard, consisting of a captain's command, viz. 120 men under arms, and a complete band of music.

I gave directions to my servant to get some room to put up my bed in for that night, till I should have more leisure to seek out a convenient lodging, and then went to see my sick provided for. I had not been long about that, when the Princess desired me to go into the great hall, where the Prince was. I did so: He was standing speaking with the principal officers, civil and military. There was one tall well-made old man, that bore a very distinguished deportment, but he seemed very pensive. I inquired who he was? and was answered by the captain on duty, that his name was Younger; that he was a brigadier

dier, and commandant of the city ; that it was thought he had almost lost his judgment by a fright, which he would acquaint me of when more at leisure ; and lastly, that his father was a Scots gentleman.

A great number of merchants entered the hall, every one having some costly present for the Prince ; some with different wines, fruits, and sweet-meats of all kinds ; others with rich silks, sattins, brocades, the produce of India and Persia ; others with cloths, &c. When the Prince observed them, he, in his homely way, returned them thanks, and said, Gentlemen, I doubt not but you are accustomed to make presents to your new governors, but I am so simple, that I never could take a present in my life, and therefore beg you'll let them be carried home : I am determined to distribute justice, as far as my judgment shall direct me, to great and small alike. The honest man is always my bosom-friend, whatever his condition otherways may be. And I am to inform you, that, after this admonition, if any shall bring presents to the Princess or any of my family, (you may believe me to be sincere) I will look upon that person as my enemy, and shall shun him accordingly.

Then he turned to the gentlemen of the army, and said, Gentlemen, you and I are quite strangers ; I hope you shall experience, that I am an honest man, and consequently love honest men, and such as delight in doing their
duty

duty to her Majesty. Such I shall always esteem and honour, whether their rank is great or small. I have no doubt of every one's observing his duty, in his different station. I have only said this, that I may at once be known to you. All the gentlemen returned him thanks because he spoke his mind so freely. The merchants sent off their presents to their own homes; but one might easily have seen surprize in their countenances, and, (by this time I understood the Russian language very well,) I overheard them making their different remarks, though all agreed that they never had seen a governor, at his first arrival, before this, refuse a present; because, say they, such presents are not given by way of bribes, nor can such presents bear any other interpretation, than that of a certain regard which they wanted to express for the person of their governor.

He happened to cast his eye upon me, and desired to speak with me. He asked, If I was fatigued with my journey? and several other questions he put to me, as if he had been my father. I told him, that I only wanted a lodging. He said, in the most affectionate manner, that where-ever he lodged, I should have my share. Then he turned to the gentlemen, and said so much about me that I shall not repeat it, and withdrew to the Princess, and told her what had passed. She was very well pleased at every thing, but his

so very peremptorily refusing the presents, especially as it never was forbidden, even by Peter the Great, who did not refuse to take a present, purely from the respect people had for him.

After a short stay, the gentlemen retired, and left the governor and his family to put their affairs to rights, and take their repose, which indeed we needed, since we left Tschornaya, because we had no houses betwixt that city and Astrachan to lodge in, except zemlenkes, which, as has already been described, are built under-ground, and therefore not agreeable to every one; add to this, that we were obliged to keep strict watch, lest the Kalmucks made an assault upon us unprovided.

C H A P. LVI.

Concerning the Inhabitants and other People living in, and immediately about Astrachan.

RUSSIANS, in our days, are the natural, and the greatest number of the inhabitants of the city of Astrachan, but the kingdom is inhabited by Kalmucks and Nagai Tartars; the last of which are the descendants of the antient inhabitants, who were conquered by Ivan Vasilitch the tyrant. They,
at

at this day, pay very great respect to their chiefs, who are called by them Murzas.

The city is inhabited by great numbers of Georgians, who embrace the Greek religion, and serve in the army, as also Armenians. They do not seek much after any other glory than merchandise, and are reckoned as cunning as the Jews, though they all profess the Christian religion. I have often thought, and am still of opinion, that they, viz. the Armenians and Georgians, are the descendents of the Jews who were sent into captivity by Nebuchadrezzar. They are liker the Jews than any other people I ever saw, and, though they are Christians, yet they have all the cunning and deceit of their progenitors.

There are many Persians, and various kinds of Tartars, which I do not rank among the inhabitants, because they plead dependence upon their own proper countries.

The Kalmucks properly inhabit that great desert lying betwixt the rivers Volga and Don, having Circassia on the south, and the line, already described, running betwixt the Volga and the Don on the north. They till no land, but feed their numerous flocks. They have no fixed place of abode, but emigrate from one place to another continually, living in tents made in the form of bee-hives; the better kinds are covered with felt, and the poorer sort with rushes or reeds. The Kalmucks live in the borders of Circassia in the
winter

winter season, but, when the spring advances, they proceed northerly, even to Tfaritzin, and return back again as the winter draweth nigh. There are many different hoards, tho' they are all one kind of people, seemingly without mixture ; every hoard has a chief, but all their chiefs are subject to one Prince, called Chan. Their Chan constantly keeps a resident in Astrachan, to take care that his subjects have justice done them ; and a captain presides over a cantoir, where many writers and interpreters are kept in pay for that purpose.

The Russians pretend, that they are subjects of their empire : The Kalmucks deny that altogether, but alledge, that they are happy in being under their protection. The Russians always keep a resident at the Chan's court, with 2 or 300 foldiers, that he may represent every thing necessary to the Chan. It was Donduk Ambo who reigned over them, when we arrived in Astrachan. This prince kept very good order, and was a severe disciplinarian : There were very few great robberies in his days, but when any happened to be brought to him, who had committed any heinous crime, he caused break their arms and legs, and let them be exposed to the wild beasts, without meat or drink, till they expired. They profess the religion of the Chinese, and pay worship to idols, but acknowledge, that they are only idols to express the
great

great regard they have for some of their saints. They acknowledge only one God, keep holidays, and have no unbecoming way of worship. They praise God by vocal and instrumental music, having at such times books in their hands, the notes of which are wrote from the top to the bottom of the page. Their music consists of stringed instruments and cymbals, to which they beat time, and indeed it is by no means disagreeable. They have a spear about eight feet long, headed as other spears, broad, and double gilt; the neck of the head is encompassed by a ring, to which a leather thong is fastened of about a foot long, to the end of which a piece of lead or other metal is made fast. When they worship, one placeth the end of this spear on the ground, and, by an imperceptible motion of the hand, causeth the metal turn round, during the time of their worship. Upon enquiry, they informed me, that this rotation was an emblem of eternity.

They certainly believe in a future state, and have some singular rejoicing in the time of new moons, by building a small tower of earth, placing on it vessels filled with oil and other materials, which they set fire to, and which exhibits light of different colours, round which they dance, gambol, and sing. They marry only one wife at once, nor must they know other women during their marriage-state. Their ceremony of marriage is reasonable,

sonable, though not agreeable to the customs of any other country I know. It is thus : A young pair, agreed betwixt themselves, retire, and live as man and wife for one year. If the young woman produceth a child in the space of one year, the marriage is completed and lawful ; but if not, they either make another year's trial, or part : Nor is the woman in the least reflected upon ; she is as greedily picked up for another trial by others, as if she were a young virgin.

Women, when married, are faithful to their husbands, for a contrary practice is punishable with death, if the husband is so minded, and he is also executioner. An example of this I was once very sorry to see. Some young men, belonging to my hospital, returning one evening home from the city, and having been overtaken with liquor, as they passed to the hospital by a few Kalmuck tents, they went in, and gave the woman liquor to intoxicate her. The husband not being present when they came there, gave them opportunities of using what liberties they pleased with the woman. In short, it was said, she was caught by her husband in the very act. He dismissed her guests without quarrelling with them, thereafter put his wife to death, and, next morning, I, with others, saw him dragging the dead body towards a bridge, from the middle of which he threw her into the river.

Their

Their priests never marry, but then they have a right, by their law, to go into any man's wife for a night. The men are so far from resenting this, that they take it as a very great honour done to them. Their priests have no riches, for they are free to use any thing belonging to any of the Kalmucks, as their own property. They make pilgrimages to China, for instructions and benedictions from their lama or high priest.

I hope our reverend fathers will not be disoblighd at this narration, as I write nothing but what I have been informed of by many to be true ; and, I am of opinion, that few young men, in the vigour of youth, could resist the cravings of the most sensible desires and passions, in a country where there is not only no restraint, but where it is thought to be a part of their duty, and undoubted rights and privileges.

Their burials are very singular. I was told, that they bury, as we do, in the earth for a certain number of years ; for an equal number, they throw their dead into the water, for another they burn the dead bodies ; and lastly, at equal terms they expose the naked bodies on the ground, to be devoured by any animal ; but they think, if their dogs eat them, it is a great sign of happiness in their after-state. I am very certain that they drew them out from their tents but a very short space, to be devoured by any beast or fowl, all the time

I was

I was at Astrachan, and that their dogs fed chiefly on them and fish, till I got a stop put to it, as the reader will be informed of in the sequel. They make continual wars or depredations upon their neighbours, but particularly against the Karacalpaaks, which obligeth the Russians to keep about three regiments of dragoons, and 4 or 5000 Cossacks, upon the banks of the Volga every summer, to prevent their passing that river. But generally it happens, that the Kalmucks have done the Karacalpaaks all the damage they could for the year, before the Russians can get to their stations; because the Kalmucks pass the river on the ice, and travel into the Karacalpaak country at the time when they are least on their guard, murder and destroy great numbers, and carry many into captivity, together with their herds and numerous flocks of cattle.

The Karacalpaaks can pursue them no further than the Volga, because, by the time they arrive upon the eastern banks, the Russians have formed their line, and deny them passage. The Karacalpaaks can only act against them in the winter season, when their formidable strength inhabit the desert on the borders of Circassia, 5 or 600 versts from the west side of the Volga; wherefore they kill and destroy all the poor Kalmucks which happen to fall in their way. Of their actions instances will be given in the course of my travels.

travels. The Kalmucks are a very swarthy, broad faced, small eyed people. They are indeed very strong and robust ; their noses are very little raised above their faces, except at the nostrils, where you observe two large broad holes. The Nagai and Karacalpaaks are a little swarthy, from their being, I suppose, in the fields during the summer season, but in other respects, they are as well formed as any man in Europe, and their women are very agreeable. The Nagai till and dress the grounds, in which they sow millet, pulse, oats, and Indian wheat, with a variety of the finest melons in the world. They live in houses in the neighbourhood of Astrachan in the winter season, but dress the land, feed their herds, hunt, and fish during the summer ; and, for their greater conveniency, live in tents, not very unlike the Kalmucks, but much more cleanly every way.

No broils happen betwixt the Nagai and Kalmucks ; for the Nagai inhabit the islands betwixt Astrachan and the Caspian sea, whereas the Kalmucks are obliged to feed their flocks in the desert to the west of the Volga. Their cattle are dromedaries, horse, horned cattle, and sheep, very singular for their tails, called by the inhabitants kardruick. The tails weigh about one-fourth of the sheep. They are very large, rather bigger than any I ever saw in England. In the beginning of summer, the Kalmucks shear the hair from

the dromedaries, and sell it to the Astrachan merchants. I suppose it is what we call mohair. I frequently have worn cloth made of it. Their Prince always keeps strong guards of 20, 30, or even 40,000 warriors about his person. Their arms are scymitars, bows and arrows. They are the best bowmen, I believe, in the world, learning the bow from their infancy. They never submit to ask their lives, and seldom give quarter to any enemy ; nor has the utmost Russian severity been able to curb this barbarous disposition ; it was for this that they were expelled the Russian army in the late war against his Prussian Majesty.

They are the most hardy of the whole human race. I am told, that they eat any thing, and in a march, they would not go a mile out of their way to pass any river a mile broad. They plunge into the water, and proceed with the greatest intrepidity.

C H A P. LVI.

Concerning the Soil, Animals, Vegetables, and Minerals about the City of Astrachan.

MR Hanway, as was said, placeth Astrachan on the long island : But the inhabitants, who ought to know best, call it the island of Hares. In the true sense, it is not
a large

a large island, for a branch of the Volga washes it from the north round the east side, and, at the distance of two miles south, it casts off a small branch which runs straight west, and falls again into the Volga, about a mile or two south from the city. The soil, not only of this island, but of the rest, and also of the desert, is very light and sandy, but it is so very much mixed with salt, that it produceth only, naturally, a great variety of Kals, vast quantities of liquorice, reeds, genista aculeata, an herb called Astrachania, nitraria, and others of the like nature. The earth will produce no grain, unless it has, during the winter season, lain under water; wherefore the Tartars have great dikes, which they open or shut, as they intend to have grain, or wash out the salt, when they intend to sow a piece of ground, they cut through the dike on the lowest end of the valley, and let out the water which formed a lake the preceeding year, and, in two or three days, from the excessive heat and drought of the climate, it is fit for tilling, then they dress it, and sow it with what grain they please, and it is incredible what increase it produces, whether grain or fruits.

They sow many different kinds of melons and pompions which they eat with bread: The water melon, I was told by our countrymen who had been in the West Indies and Italy, is far preferable to any growing in these countries;

countries : Indeed, I drank little liquor to satisfy nature, when I could get the water melon; it is extremely healthy, but the other melons are very dangerous, producing agues accompanied with dysenteries. Astrachan produceth the largest grapes I ever saw, and very agreeable to eat, though, the wine has a sharpness uncommon, which I believe proceeds from the salt of the earth. There are two kinds of mulberries here, the red and the white, the white kind, or a particular kind of white mulberries, had almost killed some of the Prince's servants by vomiting excessively, and if I had not been present, and prevented, his children would have shared the same fate.

Astrachan gardens produce very many vegetables, but they must be frequently watered for the heat and drought is very great, and showers are seldom seen here, indeed in the evenings and night-time, there falls a very great dew, dangerous for the stranger; but this is far from being sufficient to wash the salts from the earth: For an hour after sun-rise, the salt lies upon the surface of the earth like a hoar-frost.

The inhabitants of Astrachan are blessed with all kinds of tame animals which we have, and by a far greater number of wild than we have, or than I can describe; the following is a sample, wild swine, deer of different kinds, such as the elk, red and fallow deer

deer, and the antelope, which in the desert roam in herds to the number of some hundreds: The last mentioned is not well known, and therefore I shall give the following description of it, which may be relied upon, because I have killed very many. The antelope is about the bigness of a fallow deer, of a white gray colour, the head resembles something that of a cow, but its nose has no gristle, and feels in your hand as soft as velvet, it has beautiful black, yet bright prominent eyes, they are all purblind, so that a man may easily get within shot of them, they are legged and footed like other deer, they have a pair of beautiful horns, not branched, tapering from the root to the top, they have rings at equal distances from the root to the top, but they are not spiral as some write, their flesh is extremely tender and delicious, but I think it has some taste of musk, which was the reason that I could never eat of it above twice or thrice in one year; They are very swift, but cannot, in the winter season, especially, hold it out long; for I have taken them frequently with grayhounds, although, at their first setting out, they outrun the dogs by far. They are the finest runners I ever beheld, you would imagine, as they run from you, that they incline very much to one side, and that their feet scarcely touch the ground.

Hares are in very great plenty : I never saw in Astrachan, nor heard of either bears or wolves, and I suspect this may proceed from the want of their natural coverts, woods ; for there are no woods, except in the islands, and in the time of high water, the islands are all covered over, except the higher kind, and the Tartars of all nations are naturally so keen hunters, that they would soon extirpate any number : Nothing but the swiftness of deer keeps up the breed. There are wild horses in Astrachan as I was informed, but I never saw any of them alive, they are run down, and hunted like other wild animals, and it is said, they are excellent food, which I believe to be true. I have eaten what was called wild horse, but it was much preferable to any beef.

At an entertainment, my wife being with child, Mr Thomson, our landlord acquainted me, that there was to be a dish of horse-stakes, and desired I should acquaint Mrs Cook, lest, if she got notice afterwards, it might prove of bad consequence to her : I did so, she did not eat, but I did, our company numbered nine, and except Mrs Cook, every one eat plentifully, and declared they never had eaten so good beef in England, for they imagined it was beef. One Mrs Bell, who loved what was good very well, declared that she never had eaten such beef in Northumberland, where she was born, but after
she

she was informed that it was horse flesh, she soon turned sick, and threw it up ; but I imagine this proceeded neither from the bad quality of the stakes, nor from the delicacy of her constitution, but truly from the quantity she had eaten, which was not the most moderate.

Before I leave this subject, I am obliged to mention one of the most beautiful quadrupeds that I ever saw, it is called by the Russians and Circassians, the wild-goat, and is properly a native of Caucasus. I never saw more than one, which was sent as a very great present to the Prince: It is said, that there are many of them, but that they inhabit the most inaccessible mountains in Caucasus, where neither horses nor hounds can with safety pass ; wherefore, though they shoot them sometimes, yet it is very rare that they can catch them alive ; this was living, and did not seem to be old. It was neither so bulky nor so high, nor indeed any way resembled a goat, it had no beard, which indeed might have proceeded from its youth: It had a well-proportioned head, with gentle tapering jaws, beautifully prominent, bright fiery black eyes ; the head fixed to a long tapering neck, which grew agreeably greater, till it reached the well formed breast, the body of a very regular length, with a gentle belly, and strong well built posteriors, tapering legs, and cloven hoofs, with a small tail
like

like a deer ; it is all over spotted brown and white, but rather wreathed on the sides. I was told that it is good venison, but never tasted it ; the Prince sent it into Russia.

All the world have heard of the wonderful baronetze, philosophers and naturalists were divided in opinion about it, they could not adjudge it to be an animal, nor properly a vegetable : It was said that the baronetze grew in the kingdom of Astrachan, upon a stalk two foot high, from the top of which grew a lamb-like fruit, covered with a fine fur every way resembling that of a young lamb ! Who are ignorant that the Armenian or other merchants sold one to the late King of Prussia, which he as a very great curiosity, made a present of it to the Royal Society ? who suspecting a fraud, asked and obtained leave of the King to dissect it : within the skin, they discovered saw-dust or some other materials with which it was stuffed, and the navel pierced with a stick, which was so fixed, as to appearance, looked like a stalk. It was also said that no grass grew within some feet distance of this baronetze, because no doubt, it was supposed that the monster eat it up ! for it had a mouth, nor could it miss ; because it was only a lamb-skin stuffed. So full of this whim, was our Archiator Dr Fisher, that he, at the desire of his correspondents, wrote to Mr Malloch, our field apothecary, Mr Swartze, and me, to make all diligent

diligent search for this wonderful herb, tho' it was then known the Royal Society had made the discovery I just now mentioned, but no doubt he imagined that though the King of Prussia had been imposed upon, yet such wonderful vegetables might exist. We, obedient to our Archiator, made search, we also asked all the different Tartars who inhabit the desarts of Astrachan, and were ridiculed and laughed at, as we very well deserved, these people justly wondering that men who were said to be very learned, could, upon such slight informations, be so very easily imposed upon; and from this, inferring, how properly I shall not say, that much of our learning was certainly chimerical.

C H A P. LVII.

A Continuation of the History of Animals.

THE plumed inhabitants of Astrachan are too numerous for me to give an account of them, and indeed, I scarcely believe that the different nations who inhabit and traverse that kingdom, put all together, are equal to such a task; I shall however, give a short description of a few, leaving the rest to men who have more time, and abler pens than I pretend to.

S F

The

The pelican of the desert, *onocrotalus* or *pelecanus* being the largest fowl, I begin with it. It is as large as the gray eagle, which I think is greater than the swan, it is endowed with a very long bill pointed, but broad where it joins the head; the upper half is very solid, but the lower is as it were two horns, from the point diverging towards the head; betwixt which is a very capacious large bag sufficient to take in a very large fish, suppose a carp, which I have seen them swallow with ease, the head is large, the neck well proportioned to the bigness of the fowl, as is the body, the wings and tail are very long to carry such a weight: They are of a white gray colour, are great fishers, and flock together to the number of 2 or 300. They sit upon the banks of the river through the day and night-time, and only fish in the morning and evening. When they fish they fly to a bank, the bottom of which they can nearly reach with their feet, which are webbed something like a goose, and join one to one in such a manner, that a fish can scarcely pass by them, especially because they join their wings to their neighbours, and immerging them and their spread tails into the water, form a very great line something resembling a crescent, enclosing all the small fish betwixt them and the shore, to which they proceed slowly, picking up the fish till they are got on shore, which they do very nimbly: It is a very harmless

harmless bird, only a great destroyer of fish. Where they hatch their young I know not: They taste so much of fish that they are not eaten by the inhabitants, and they depart towards Persia in the winter. Another there is, which the Russians likewise call pelican, the Germans *lebel gause*: The body of it is white as snow, its legs are long and black, as is its bill, which from round near the head turns an inch broad at least at the farthest extremity, it is full of sharp prickles fit to hold any thing it may catch, it is as white as snow; and from the hind part of the head grow five or six long milk-white beautiful feathers, which the Empress Anne and her ladies wore, placed in sockets of gold on their head-dress; the body of this pelican is about as big as a Muscovy duck; they are fishers, and through the whole day run upon the banks of shallow lakes, continually directing their broad bill from one side to the other, that they may readily apprehend their fish. They are not very delicious food; because they partake of the fish taste, though I have frequently eaten them.

There is another water-fowl called by the Russians *corovaika*, it is all of a colour, but not quite black; it is about the bigness of a hen, has a long crooked black bill like a snipe but much longer, it lives and seeks its food on the banks of the rivers and lakes, yet it does not taste of fish: Its flesh is brown, but
extremely

extremely delicious, although it is not fat, it is very tender, it is not shy. Wherefore they are easily killed. There are very many swans, and a very great variety of ducks. I shall only describe two kinds which are not known in this country, at least I have not heard of them, and I am so far distant from any good libraries, that I only can consult my own. One kind is of a brown-red colour, but more red on the breast than any other part of the body: They fly in flocks, but a little scattered, and are always near rivers or lakes, though I never saw any of them swimming. If you happen to kill one of them, all those who heard the report of the gun, immediately take wing and fly towards the place where the fowler stands; and if he does not conceal the killed duck, they continue so long to fly round, making a very mournful tone, that an indifferent good sportsman may kill a very great number of them without altering his situation: But they are not good to eat, tasting very dry, hard, and fishy. There is another kind extremely small not bigger than a quail, it is very beautiful, exactly shaped like a duck, but the feathers are curiously diversified with green, white, red and yellow. They are shy, and I imagine never were eaten. I only once killed one at Derbent with a ball; you have no chance with small shot, as they permit none to come so near them.

I shall

I shall just mention another water-fowl, and make an end of them. The one I mean is of a white colour, but a little variegated with either black or green. It has two very long legs red as blood, and wades deep into the water; the bill is red, but from the head it projects in a horizontal figure, and then it makes an angle, and turns downwards towards the breast. It fishes by wading, but does not swim. Every kind of fowls which are to be found on the land of Great Britain, are also to be found here, and therefore I shall not describe them; only I cannot pass by one remarkable accident, which happened long after I arrived in Astrachan. One day walking by a large field of millet, in company with another, my dog went among the millet and sprung some quails, some of which we shot. A Tartar, to whom the field belonged, came to us. We imagined, before he came near us, that he designed to chide us for permitting the dog to go among the millet, and would, for that reason, have been glad we had been somewhere else; not that we were in the least afraid of any thing the Tartar could do, but the thoughts of having wantonly wronged a harmless kind of people, were very disagreeable. In short, when he came to us, he with great courtesy told us, that these birds destroyed his millet, and that if we liked the diversion of killing them, if we would take the trouble to go into the field among the millet, it was probable we would get 100 for one :

one : He said he would go to his tent and provide some delicious melons by the time we should return, not doubting but that we would be very thirsty.

We readily agreed to this scheme, and, as few people shot there, killed a great many. We arrived in his tent afterwards, and observed, that we did not care to walk among his millet, lest we should destroy much with our feet and the dogs. He returned for answer, that it was true that we might destroy some, but that men never would destroy much ; and affirmed, that the quails destroyed more than if many men were to pass through it daily, after it was once headed. He said, that men naturally, for the love they had for grain, never would rashly tread it down, but carefully mark their footsteps ; that the dogs indeed, said he, would shake some, was certain ; but, he averred, that that altogether would not equal one tenth part of what the quails devoured and shook.

After this I many times diverted myself in this way, and many of my friends, with eating the quail, which, however delicious, were so fat, that I could make but two or three meals of them in a season. The people in Astrachan also said, that they never had known quails shot in that neighbourhood before that time. From what is said, it is indisputable, that here there is no want of wild fowl and the best quadrupeds in the world ; but if the land

land produceth so luxuriantly, the water, the famous Volga, produceth to the full as great variety and plenty of the most delicious fish.

The belugo is the first I shall mention, as the largest in that mighty river. I imagine it is so compleatly described in Ray's *synopsis methodica piscium*, that I may refer the reader to it under the name of *Attilus*, by *Rondel. Bellon. de aquatil. p. 126. Gesn. Aldrov. Adella et Adano, hodie Italis dictis, &c.* which he may read, page 113 of the above book. He indeed, and some others, thought that it was a fish only to be found in the rivers of Italy, Lombardy, the Danube, and Boristhenes. I imagine that the huso, attilus, and belugo, is the same fish. It is indeed very like the sturgeon in make, but much larger. It frequently weighs more than 1000 lb. A stone, or rather a bone, is found in the head of the belugo, which, when broken in two, one would imagine, by the colour and lines through it, that it is a piece of *mercurius sublimatus corrosivus*; but every one knows, that the sublimate is very ponderous, but this is very light. It is kept as a curiosity, and is said to be a great lithontriptic. I have used it, but cannot say much to its praise.

In the year 1740, I sent a very large one to my learned and worthy friend Dr Sanchiez, physician to the Empress. The belugo is so much like the sturgeon, and, as said above, so well described by the great Ray, that I shall say

say no more of. The sturgeon is so well known, that it would take up time needlessly to say any thing about it more, than only that the Volga abounds so much with it, that it makes great part of the fish-commerce betwixt Russia, other countries, and Astrachan. The Volga produceth white salmon, a very fat and unwholesome fish; carp, pike, perch, a fish as large as a salmon, but not so good, which the Russians call sudaak; smelts, and an incredible variety of small fish. I shall only mention two, because, I believe, they are little known in this country; the first is the stirlet, it is made very like to a sturgeon, but never so large, and has no bone in its body, in place whereof it has cartilages, which may be, and are frequently eaten. This is a most delicious fish. The biggest I ever saw weighed only 35 lb. Troy. The other fish I shall mention is called by the Russians som, and their young soimka. It has a large flat, round head, a mouth in the form of a crescent, set full of teeth like an heckle; its neck, and as far as the *anus*, is of an equal bigness, from thence to the tail it grows gradually smaller. It has scarcely any scales, is very much skinned like an eel, and has large eyes. Some of them are a yard or more in circumference.

The som is a bold fish, and will attack a man, and if out of his depth will easily drown him, being both big and long. He measures,
if

if old, five feet and some inches. The Russians will not eat of it, because it eats men. The Kalmucks greedily devour it. I have eaten of a young som, and found it very delicious, the flesh being as white as milk. One day I had very near lost an excellent water-dog, by some young som; long he struggled, but at last got free. Had it been an old one, he would have taken the dog easily to the bottom. Many men, when swimming, have been drowned by the som.

C H A P. LIX.

Concerning the different Methods the Astrachanians have to take Fish, cure them, and their Method of making Caviar, called by the Russians Ikra.

I Would not be thought here to know intimately all their ways of managing these branches of business; yet I hope what I write will be so intelligible, that any may understand my meaning. I am confident, that many will find it new; and altho' I have formerly written these accounts to my learned correspondents, yet many who may read this, never have seen the other.

The fishers, who live on the islands of the Volga in zemlenkes, or wooden houses under-ground, catch their fish with hooks, nets,

and harping irons. Though these are the instruments with which we catch fish, yet I'm persuaded, that they use them differently, both summer and winter. With lines and hooks baited they take the sturgeon, and all other fish less in magnitude; but very seldom can they take the belugo in this manner; wherefore they make use of a strong rope, 1, 2, or 300 ells long, and, at the distance of every two ells or less, from one end of the rope to the other, they fix large barbed hooks, but not baited, with their sharp points standing upwards, looking over each side of the rope. The rope thus prepared they place across the river, letting it down to the bottom, with the points of the hooks above the rope, and fix a buoy to each end of it. The belugo, which is chiefly taken in this manner, loves to swim near the sandy bottom of the river, and he swims ordinarily very rapidly; therefore, whether he is swimming with or against the stream, he has a great chance of being hooked in the belly, because the points of the hooks look to each side of the rope. If the grip is but small, he breaks off; but the greatest number of the largest belugo are thus taken. When the fisher misses his buoys at the places he put them in, he is certain that a fish has been there, and so sails about till he finds them, and then coils up the rope very carefully into the boat. If the fish is not spent, he may draw the boat and rope after him

him for a long while; but at last, being quite exhausted, the fishers gently draw him near the boat, and, before he touch it, they strike him on the head with an iron hammer, but have the rope ready to let go, if they should miss the proper place, for he will swim a great way, and, if they do not give him rope enough, he would easily draw the boat, tho' large, under water. Thus to the fisher it is very troublesome and dangerous to take a belugo, though, to a spectator, it affords very agreeable diversion.

The nets which are used in the Volga are both strong, long, and deep: They are from 50 to 100 fathoms long. In summer they place the net so as to make the figure of half a circle, out of their boats, and bring the ropes fixed to both ends of the net ashore, at a great distance the one end from the other; then, having a great number of men, they pull till they get near the bank, when they row their boats within the net, and, with their barbed irons, they strike the larger fish, and take them into their boats; but it requires much patience and great toil. Lastly, they draw out the net with an incredible number of different fish. If a strong old belugo happens to be amongst them, he frequently breaks the net, gets away, and lets many prisoners escape; so that the fisher is never glad to see a large belugo in the net. In the winter season they cannot use such large nets, but I have

have seen them use nets of betwixt 30 and 50 fathoms long ; and the way they do is this : They cut a large square hole through the ice on the side of the river, for extracting the net ; then, opposite to that square hole, they cut another at a just distance, so that a straight line drawn betwixt these two holes forms a diameter to a large circle, which they afterwards form with a number of holes cut thro' the ice, at such a distance one from the other, that they can reach with a long pole. Having now made all their holes, they introduce into the middle hole, far in the river or lake, two poles, for the greater expedition, and shove one forward on each side, from one hole to the other, till they meet at the first made square hole at the shore. A rope having been made fast to the end of each pole, serves to conduct the net regularly, so as to form a circle, which, with the assistance of many men, they draw out of the square hole.

In this manner, I once, near Astrachan, saw an incredible number of different fish taken by a number of men. They catch smaller fish as big as carp, pike, or salmon, with a barbed harping iron, made fast to a long pole, (which the Scots call *lister*,) as we do, particularly in the time of high water, when the fish play among the grass ; but there are few if any red salmon in the Volga. As every one knows how fish are taken with bait, I shall say nothing of it further, than that I
have

have seen a belugo thus taken in the winter season, which was so ponderous, that, the fishermen assured me, it would be, though fixed upon sledges, a large load for two good horses to draw on the ice.

The Russians prepare caviar almost from every kind of fish: Thus, I have frequently, at the best tables in that empire, eaten fresh caviar from pike. The Russians have three different ways of preparing caviar: The first is the simplest and best, and is truly but a part of the other two operations. Caviar is the spawn or *ova* of the female fish. That prepared for keeping, and for the Russian and foreign market, is extracted chiefly from the belugo and sturgeon; that of the stirlet is, I imagine, all consumed at home, being extremely delicious food. The only art used in the first preparation, is, carefully to clear the *ova* from their membranes and filaments, which they do by shaking and washing them; then, under a shade, they place them upon a sieve or board, so that the superfluous moisture may drain off. This fresh caviar is sold at Astrachan at about three pence *per* 12 ounce. The second method of preparing it is, first to cleanse it, as has been said, and cask it up well salted, which is fit either for foreign or Russian markets. The third way is, to prepare as formerly, and, when well salted, they put it into a press to squeeze out much of the moisture; this is called pressed caviar;

caviar ; but I do not think it good, for it loses much of the delicious taste of that prepared the second way. I imagine no part of any fish, at least which I have tasted, is comparable to the fresh caviar. The fishermen have stages well aired, though the rays of the sun cannot penetrate the roof, where they cut open their large fish, and either sun-dry them, or salt them, and then pack them up for the market. The smaller fish, being cut open, and the guts taken out, are so perfectly sundried, that, upon the banks of the river, they build them up into stacks, and let them stand exposed to the open air till they are shipped off. In this manner they prepare the carp. I have known 100 carp bought from the net for a ruble. In London, their tongues preserved alone, I doubt not, would bring to the fishmonger ten times that value. I have frequently bought a live sturgeon at Astrachan for three pence, and so the rest. One is always sure of fish upon the Volga. The fishers never would take money from me, but gave *gratis*, for me and the people with me, as much as we could eat, and some to carry along with us ; and if I gave them a glassful of spirits, they expressed great satisfaction. I had almost forgot to acquaint the reader, that the largest, fullest, and best tasted cray-fish I ever met with, are to be found on the banks of the Volga ; and, for a penny, one may get as many as six men can eat. In half an hour, a
man

man accustomed to catch them, may get a basket full, or as many as he can conveniently bring home.

There are but few reptiles in Astrachan. I have seen only three different kinds. The first is very rare, it may be two ells long, and is speckled yellow and black. I never heard that they hurt any person, though some say that they are noxious. The second kind are speckled black and white; they are not so large as the first, but are quite innocent, unless they are irritated, and their number is incredible. In the month of March, first when they make their appearance, they are very feeble, and scarcely can crawl, and ly in some pit or hollow place, many of them linked together; but, as the heat advances, they get strength. The third kind is the viper, which is so well known, that I shall say nothing about them. Possibly there is a greater variety, but I neither was informed of, nor saw any other. There are many tarantulas in Astrachan, which carry their young on their bodies about with them, where-ever they go. I have had many patients bit by them, but never had any difficulty to cure them, altho' the bite always produceth a very fordid ulcer. There is another insect which I must mention; that is the locust: It is about two inches and one half long, or three at most, of a whitish grey colour, and is accomplished with four wings. It is as big about the body as a silk-worm.

worm. They appear about Astrachan in the end of July, or beginning of August, in such numbers, that it is incredible. A south-west wind constantly brings them like large clouds. Mr Hanway is mistaken, when he says, that they come from W. N. W. The truth of this I assert, because I observed them every year. Indeed I believe, that, when they are flying, and a north wind blows, they will proceed south. They are a great plague to the inhabitants of Astrachan; for, where-ever they alight, they leave but few vegetables growing; however, they never were known to eat the leaves of melons. In the month of August I believe they copulate, and for a long time stick fast together, but at no other time, as I have been informed. I believe that they generate in Cuban, Georgia, Circassia, and Astrachan; and I make no doubt of their generating in all the countries south of these; but I suppose, that the extreme frosts in Russia destroy them and their seeds. The Astrachanians endeavour to frighten them from their fields and gardens, by shooting, ringing bells, and making great noise, but I suspect to little purpose; for I have known them alight in gardens, in spite of all opposition, and, before they decamped, would not have left any thing valuable green. When I sailed on the Caspian, I have seen an incredible number floating on the surface of the water, above 50 miles from shore. There are great numbers of

of small tortoises about the banks of the Volga, not exceeding one foot in length, but they are not eaten by the inhabitants, because they imagine they are poisonous, though the cook, who went to Persia with us, who was an Austrian, affirmed the contrary, and said, that he had dressed them frequently.

C H A P. LX.

Concerning Minerals found about Astrachan, &c.

NORTH from Astrachan, about the distance of seven miles, the Russians dig up a kind of earth, in a place on the west banks of the Volga, called *sal litri*, a corruption of *sal nitri*, and macerate it for some time in water; then they draw off the clear water, and, by adding foot and some quick lime, they evaporate the water, and make as good salt petre as can be made any where. They say, that this has been an antient city. I doubt not the truth of this, because brick has been found frequently under ground, and money also, some of which, both silver and gold, I have seen, and am in possession of some at present, though the characters are not, I believe, legible*.

U u

The

* Some authors have given out, that the swallows about this

The men frequently find precious stones in digging this earth. Whether they have been lost accidentally in former ages, or are natural minerals, I shall not dispute; but I am certain, that some of them are quite rough, and of little value till they are polished. One day I bought from a jeweller two unpolished rough rubies, found there by a soldier, and two small diamonds. The rubies weighed eight carats, and were without blemish: The diamonds weighed both but one carat, and were polished. These four stones were valued by the jeweller at five rubles: I agreed to give him the money next day, but Captain Tandefelt, a Swede, one of Governor Tatishoff's spies, went in and informed Mr Tatishoff, who sent, unknown to me, for the jeweller, paid him the money, and kept the jewels. Indeed, when I challenged him for buying my jewels from a person who had no right to sell them, he could give no reasonable answer, but desired, that I would let him keep them, and at the same time made me a present of a ring with a large amethyst, but not very good. Many such stones have been found at that place; and, though they have turned over the earth twice already, and, when

this place are of a different sort from ours, and tie their young with hairs by the feet, lest they fall out of their nests. Dr Leuch and I made strict search about this, and I can affirm, that it is false. There is not the smallest difference, nor did we find any tied by the feet.

when I was there, were working the same earth the third time, yet they continue to discover both stones and pieces of silver and gold; but the metal has been wrought, and therefore it is no native of the place. There are very few fresh water lakes in the neighbourhood of the city, but a great many brackish, very salt, or even covered over with salt, like to ice: Upon some of them I have walked; and if the salt is broken any where upon the banks of the lake, where it is not deep, the moisture beneath is black as ink, and emits a most disagreeable noisome smell, though the salt is of the best kind. In some exceeding brackish lakes, but not crusted over, I have taken up small cakes of the most excellent chrystal salt. At the distance of 60 versts south-west from Astrachan, there is a large salt lake, about 50 versts long and 20 broad, so thick crusted over, that some hundred horse and carts are constantly at work, carrying salt to be put on board vessels riding in the Volga, not only for the use of the kingdom of Astrachan, but the greatest part of the Empire of Russia. This salt-men dig out of the lake with great iron gavelocks. There are two remarkable salt lakes immediately under the south walls of Astrachan, always crusted over in the summer season. The salt is neither pure nor fine, but it has a redness in its colour, and smells strongly of violets. Possibly it may receive that particular smell from
the

the drains of the city running into the lakes, and volatilizing the salt. Our apothecary took a large quantity of it, and, by many solutions, filtrations and chrySTALLIZATIONS, rendered it as pure as was possible; yet it retained the smell, though weaker by much, as also the reddish colour. This was sent to the medicine chancery as a curiosity.

C H A P. LXI.

A Description of the River Volga.

THE Volga takes its rise in Novogorod-Velik, in the lake Troickoi, and further north in different places. It is joined by a canal to the river Msta, as has already been said. It has, besides these, so many different sources in different provinces, that it would be endless to describe all its different heads; for it runs through such a large tract of ground, and communicates with so many different rivers, navigable by small craft, running from so many provinces, that it promotes trade and commerce to a greater extent of land than France, Spain, and Italy joined together: But the main body, running from Tweer to Astrachan, I imagine, if you compute the different turnings and windings, will measure about 3000 versts, and, on the other side of Tweer, it cannot exceed 200 versts;

versts ; and, adding 60 versts betwixt Astrachan and the Caspian sea, its length, from its source to the sea, is 3250 versts. The Russian corrected map will witness that I am not far from the truth, notwithstanding Mr Hanway, according to his incorrect way, makes this river 4500 versts. The main or principal stream of the Volga glides by the following cities and great mercantile towns : In its way betwixt Tweer and Astrachan, beginning from Tweer, Caszin, Uglitz, Orestma, Kostroma, Pavelofske, Nisni Novogorod, Kuzmudemiansk, Kazan, Sinbirsck, Samara, Alexerisk, Sizran, Kaszpor, Saratof, Demitzofske, Tfaritzin, Tchorna-yare, Sallitri, and Astrachan. I hope the reader will excuse mentioning the above places, because my design in doing this is purely for the use of passengers, that they may run no risk of being imposed upon, and have always plenty of provision and other necessaries. I have not mentioned the distances, because, as I never navigated the river betwixt Tweer and Tfaritzin, I know them no other way but by measuring the map, which every one may peruse. I have not spelled the names of the cities and towns the same way as those who have written before me, as I hinted formerly, because they have all been foreigners, who were not masters of the Russian language, and have spelled them so, that a Russian would not understand what they meant ; whereas, if any shall pronounce them,

as I have spelled them, the inhabitants can be at no manner of loss, which is of the greatest use to a stranger who is ignorant of the Russian language.

At Tweer the Volga receives the Tweerka, which is only a branch of the Volga. In its passage to Astrachan, it receives the following remarkable rivers, upon which barks and large boats are navigated: Sekfna, Untza, Klyasma, Okka, the Wjatha, and Biclaja, join and enter the Volga in one stream together with the Kama, Samara: Achtaba is only a branch of the Volga, which is cast off at Tfaritzin, and thence proceeds to the sea, frequently joining with each other, by detached streams. Betwixt Astrachan and the sea it is so divided, that its inhabitants, I am persuaded, do not know all the islands and different streams; but the principal ones keep near the west bank, and, at forty-five versts distance from Astrachan, run by Earkee, a port belonging to the admiralty, for taking proper notice of vessels outward or homeward bound; and beyond this, next the sea, are four hills, which, in the Russian language, are called Tchatire bugree, where passengers are detained in suspicious times, to perform quarantine. On this however there are no proper houses. The inhabitants of Earkee and Astrachan say, that the Volga disembogues itself into the Caspian by fifteen or sixteen streams; but, as I said, they are not
very

very certain. I shall conclude my remarks about the Volga, by acquainting the reader, that, about the latter end of April, the river begins to swell every year, and continues to increase for five or six weeks, but begins to subside about the latter end of June, and soon runs out by the tenth or twelfth of July. The overflowing of this vast river is caused purely by the melting of the ice and snow covering the immense space, during the long winter, through which its various branches run; no other cause of rains having any perceptible effect at Astrachan, where it rises in perpendicular height, above its ordinary level, eight or ten feet. It is true, at a greater distance from Astrachan, towards Russia, in some places it rises; above the common level, twenty feet and upwards; but this proceeds from the current being confined by high banks and lands; whereas at Astrachan, except a very few small hills in the islands, there are no high lands on the east as far as the eye can perceive any thing. Add to this, that the Volga is divided into so many large streams, as has been already mentioned, that the water gets a free and unconfined passage into the Caspian sea. At no other fixed time in the year the Volga swells, and I never knew it swell by rains, which are very rare in Astrachan; but I have known it swell five or six feet perpendicular, by strong winds blowing from the south, if they continue three or four days;

days ; and indeed it will swell as far up, or farther than Tſaritzin, which many think proceeds purely from the ſea-water, though I am of a different opinion. That the ſea-water greatly aſſiſts, I have no difficulty to grant; but then it is certain, that very high winds, blowing contrary to the ſtream for a long continued time, will ſtop its paſſage, in proportion to the ſtrength of the winds, and level of the country through which it runs; and the level of the country betwixt Tſaritzin and Aſtrachan is known to be very great, becauſe the waters do not run two miles in one hour, unleſs they are accelerated by north winds. Mr John Perry, that accurate engineer, makes the Volga to run ſomewhat faſter than one mile and an half in one hour. I was told by Mr Poſſet (a Frenchman, who kept the Empreſs's vine-gardens in order, of whom I ſhall have occaſion to make mention in the courſe of this work,) and many of the inhabitants affirmed, that it was true, that the Caſpian ſea roſe gradually high, and overtopped ſeveral low iſlands, and gradually decreaſed, leaving them dry every nineteen years. One would be apt to think, that this phænomenon might be cauſed by the moon ; but as I intend to purſue my travels cloſely and briefly, I ſhall leave this to be canvafſed by aſtronomers. There are very few cities in the kingdom of Aſtrachan. Kamſhinka and Saratoff, neither of which I ever ſaw, Tſaritzin, Tchor-nayar,

nayar, and Astrachan, are the only cities, properly speaking, in this kingdom. There was a new city built, at my leaving the place, betwixt Tchornayar and Astrachan, called Eanataiva Crepuſt; now Chircassia is joined to the kingdom of Astrachan, of which Kizleer is the capital; but as I shall have occasion to describe that country in my journey to Persia, I shall say no more about it at present.

C H A P. LXI.

Of the Garrison and Government of Astrachan.

THE garrison of Astrachan consists of six regiments, five of infantry and one of dragoons. The immediate chief commander of the garrison is the commandant, who is commonly a brigadier, though I have known a colonel, but then he cannot command a senior colonel: But orders issued from, and in the name of the cantoir or office belonging to the garrison, where all their affairs are transacted by all officers of superior rank, must be obeyed. Each regiment has a separate hospital, though in very bad condition, as will be taken notice of in the sequel. Besides the proper garrison, three or a greater number of field regiments commonly winter here, and 2 or 3000 Cossacks, besides the Tartar militia: For the Kalmucks are not, in Astrachan especially, much to be trusted. The use of this regular garrison is to keep watch about the city and citadel;

there are also a detached number of 3 or 400 sent to Kizleer, and a few to Tchernayaz, but none to Tzaritzin: It being garrisoned by the field forces. The irregulars, are never made use of, but in conjunction with the regulars, and to scour the desert in troublesome times, and bring certain advice of the operations, places of resort, and numbers of these wandering barbarians who disturb their neighbours. This garrison of Astrachan seems to have more fatigue, and no better pay than any other garrison in Russia: They are frequently obliged to march into the deserts in the greatest frosts, by which many are frozen to death, they are also obliged in the summer to fell and bring to Astrachan wood for the use of the garrison hospitals, but chiefly for their officers, as also hay: This mal-practice will not be redressed till they get another sovereign like Peter the Great. I was assured, and have some reason to believe it, that this garrison one year with another, is recruited with 1500 men, and, that such a loss of men at Astrachan is peculiar only to the garrison, I am certain, because I have frequently compared the dead list of my hospitals belonging to the admiralty, who were kept in the best order, and had every thing required for the benefit of the sick, whether medicines, eating and drinking, granted immediately with those of the garrison. When these poor recruits are ordered

to

to march for Astrachan, they are sent by water to save charges, and the more effectually to keep them together. They therefore are sent in the summer season, and, by the time they arrive in Astrachan, the different fruits are all ripe, on which these poor half starved creatures fly with great voraciousness, and in a very short time, from a fish diet upon the Volga for six or eight weeks, a warm moist air still increasing as they advance nearer Astrachan, and being lodged in very ill contrived wet barracks, and surcharging all the vessels in their bodies with fruits, which before their arrival they never had seen, far less eaten, they contract malignant quartans, and fluxes of all kinds, which very soon reduce their numbers to what I mentioned above. That this might be helped I have no doubt: But as I am not writing about medical affairs, I shall say no more of it here, lest it may be disagreeable to many of my readers, who will find in the end of this work many observations upon the wretched condition of the garrison at Riga, over which I had the direction as well as of the army, and what struggles I chearfully engaged in, and had some better order introduced before I left them, which very few inhabitants in Riga are ignorant of, and by which, I hope, the garrison of that place reaps great advantages to this day.

C H A P. LXII.

Concerning the Commerce of Astrachan.

BEING, as I said before, quite ignorant of mercantile affairs, I can only here give an account of the goods imported and exported to and from Astrachan : Its merchants from very different nations, not only reside here for a time, but many are born in the place, and through length of time, seeing the advantages and privileges the Russian merchants enjoy, which foreigners cannot, they very frequently declare themselves subjects of Russia, so that at present many Armenians, who, every one knows, are the natural subjects of either Persia or Turkey, deny their allegiance to either of these mighty monarchies, and even, when they reside for a time in either of these empires, boldly claim the protection of the Russian ambassadors, residents, or consuls. This being the case, I may certainly affirm that the produce of Persia, Armenia, Georgia, India, Buchar, and Chiva, are imported by the Caspian sea from all these countries ; such as silks, satins, velvets, brocades, cotton cloaths of all denominations, jewels, some drugs, copper and many other things, together with Persian wines, and variety of fruits and sweet-meats,

meats, confections, &c. From Russia they transport to Persia, and the other nations named above, but very few goods; because many articles of the produce of Russia are prohibited to be exported to these nations, though they are allowed to be exported to the different nations in Europe. Thus, iron, hemp, pitch, tar, gun-powder, salt-petre, sulphur, flint-stones and every thing fit for ship-building and war, are reckoned contraband to be exported to any port in Persia. Meal only but by the immediate permission of the Court, is exported: Cloaths of different sorts, woolen manufacturies, fish, salt and a few other things also are permitted to be exported; the Armenians are allowed indeed to transport European goods of all sorts, except warlike and naval stores, but they must sell none in Russia, and must buy them with the produce of raw silks of the Persian growth, or jewels.

The Astrachan merchants alone are allowed to have ships on the Caspian sea, and they generally have betwixt twenty and thirty for sea service, which they call heght boats. These vessels carry, one with another, one hundred tuns, but are built very flat like the Holland ships, and therefore are only fit for the coast; because they cannot sail, like the British, near the wind. Besides these sea vessels, they have barks for navigating the Volga, barks of a monstrous figure and size,
some

some of them are more than a hundred feet long, and about forty feet broad, but not much above four or five feet deep, quite flat bottomed, in these barks, they transport fish, salt, &c. to Russia; they are warped up the river against the stream, which work necessarily requires many hands, not fewer than two hundred. It is true that these large barks have each one mast, and a sail of incredible breadth, for the mast is not very long, but it is of no manner of use, unless the wind is very near right a-stern. I have been told that they go at the rate of forty or fifty versts in one day against the stream and wind, if it is not very strong: But they neither sail nor warp in the night-time. Each bark is accompanied by three boats, one boat is constantly at the stern to receive the rope from the men who are warping, and as soon as they have received the whole length with its anchor, they run away a-head, to drop the anchor in a proper place, whilst the second boat is ready to deliver the rope to the men on board, and then falls down to the stern to receive the rope again: Before the half of this rope is warped into the second boat, the third boat lies ready with a part of the rope it has fixed by an anchor, to be delivered on board the boats. Indeed, it is almost incredible how fast by this method, the bark is warped, nor does she stand still one moment through the whole day, if the wind is not
very

very high ; but if the wind is very high, they warp none till it is calmer. The warpers are all accommodated with a broad belt of leather, which lies on the right shoulder, and is brought under the left arm, to this is joined a piece of small strong cord with a knot at the end, the warper tosseth the small rope round the great one, and in an instant fixeth it, and moves forward as fast as they can go, and when they have reached the stern of the bark, they immediately disengage themselves, and return to the head. It is surprising how expeditiously and regularly they perform this work. I have been told that if pirates board their barks they call out, and let them know that they are pirates, and order them to fall down on their faces and lie in that posture, till the pirates are gone. They accordingly obey, for they do not love fighting, and the pirates take what they stand in need of, and depart without injuring either the men or bark, but if any look up when the pirates are on board, they run the risque of being instantly killed ; and if they fight with the pirates, and are overcome, no quarter will be granted, lest they be discovered. The Armenians however fight very bravely, and the pirates do not altogether relish a combat with them, unless they are very numerous, and well provided with arms.

Before I make an end of this chapter, I cannot pass by a piece of history which happened

pened this year with the pirates, who were said to have been about two thousand strong, and very well provided with good arms. They were so bold as to attack, and murder all who made resistance, and not satisfied with plundering passengers on the river, they carried off from the neighbouring villages whatsoever they stood in need of. The Court having been duly informed of this ordered a regiment of dragoons to march against them, commanded by a Russian colonel: The colonel, not suspecting any danger near, especially as he was marching against irregular banditti, drove forward for the conveniency of lodging, and left his regiment to march slowly after him, commanded by his lieutenant colonel. Long before he came near the place where they suspected the pirates to be, one day soon after, the colonel had taken up his lodging, and was reposing himself on a bed, a fellow entered the room, and asked him if he was the commander in chief of the regiment? The colonel ordered him out of his presence; but, instead of complying, he called out to his companions, who entered the room in great numbers, and most imperiously stripped the colonel, and whipped him most unmercifully, ordered him back, though he was all over covered with blood, to attend his regiment, and tauntingly told him, that what he had suffered was only a small punishment, for
not

not understanding his duty ; therefore advised him not to part again with his regiment on a march, but added he would do well to advise his superiors, that many such regiments would find it a hard task to reduce such a number of brave well-disciplined fellows as they were. In this however they were miserably mistaken ; for the governor of Cazan, having been informed of what had happened to the colonel, ordered the brave Innes, of whom mention has been made formerly at the siege of Otchakoff ; Mr Innes took a very different method of marching, and lost no time to come up with them, and as soon as possible he dispatched some sensible trusty spies mounted on good horses, and dressed as peasants, and he took care to pass all cities and great villages on the river in the night-time, through bye-roads, and, by this cautious way, he came within a small distance of the place where they were, and was well informed that the pirates imagined themselves in very great safety, and were carousing and making very merry at the expence of the former unfortunate colonel ; that they were so far from expecting any danger that they were encamped on the banks of the Volga, and not on any of the islands, which they constantly do, when they dread any danger, and that their boats were at anchor hard by them. The colonel drew his men as near as he could, to prevent his being discovered, and sent his spies on foot to watch their motions: At

last, word was brought, near the morning, that they were probably sleeping, as every thing in their camp was quiet. The colonel encouraged his men, who loved him much, to obey command with exactness, and declared, that all his share of booty should be given to the dragoons : Then he ordered one party to ride up the banks of the river, and another to ride down the banks ; that these two parties should endeavour to get betwixt them and their boats, and, at the same time, send off a few of the best swimmers to secure the boats. Whilst this was transacting, he, with a considerable division, marched straight upon them to prevent their getting into the woods, and in this manner, I was informed, he surrounded them, and took possession of their boats. He ordered his men instantly to fall on the main body, which they executed with great briskness ; many were killed as they lay sleeping, but many got their arms, and fought with surprising resolution and conduct. At last however, they were reduced to a very few, and most of them wounded, who, for the love of living a few days longer in the greatest of misery and many torments, and at last the most cruel of deaths, rendered themselves prisoners to the victorious colonel, by whom they were sent to Casan, tried by the governor, and executed, by hanging them up by the ribs alive, upon gibbets fixed upon floats. Five or six men were thus hang-
ed

ed upon one float, upon each of which written orders were pasted on the most conspicuous places, commanding, that if the floats should perhaps be intangled, and so stopped from going down with the stream, whoever should happen to see them, should push them off again ; and that whoever should be known to give the pirates any help or relief, should be punished with death in the same manner.

When a report of this transaction reached St Petersburg, every one applauded the conduct and bravery of Mr Innes, except some rich Lords at court, whose villages, as has been said, had been plundered by these banditti. They accused Mr Innes of granting the spoil to the dragoons, being, as they said, the property of their innocent peasants. They insisted on having Mr Innes brought to a court-martial, and tried for the same. I was informed, that orders were either making or made out for this purpose, when the news of the brave Innes's death prevented any further enquiry. How far Mr Innes was right or wrong, I shall not take upon me to determine : Nor shall I assert, whether any set of people, who have suffered by such a respectable body of villains, if I may be allowed to use such an expression, have any better right than others to be indemnified for their loss ; nor how it could well be possible to ascertain that loss, considering that many things had been

been sold, embezzled, or otherways rendered invisible. But sure none could say, that the colonel had any gain by it; and as sure he meant to act for the best; and, tho' he might have very good reasons to put great trust in the bravery and resolution of his men, it cannot be denied, that, where interest is in view, it gives additional resolution to the best troops in the world. Though it were possible to imagine a body of 1500 men capable of being quite disinterested, yet the thoughts of their fighting and exposing their lives to imminent danger, purely to enrich, if victorious, the minions of a court, would naturally damp their ardour; and, when such practice is continued, it never fails to have that effect, and frequently worse consequences, even the total subversion of government. Thus fell the brave Innes, the soldier's friend, and beloved of all good men, whose loss was justly regretted by all the armies of Russia. I neither ever had the honour of his acquaintance, nor any of his relations; and therefore, what I write is intended purely to do justice to the memory of a man, who deserved a far better fate.

CHAP.

C H A P. LXIV.

Concerning the Occurrences which happened during the Author's first abode in Astrachan.

IT is easy to be conceived, that after our arrival, the singular parental-like behaviour of the Governor and his Lady to me, caused every one believe, that I was no small favorite ; and therefore I was not a little carested by all degrees of the inhabitants. Some wanted to make me an advocate in their affairs, by promises and presents, which I rejected with such disdain, that I was very soon eased of a great deal of trouble.

The ice went off the day after our arrival; and, in a few days thereafter, the Governor and his family went by water to see a silk-worm shade, which an Armenian merchant had, by his knowledge and industry, produced about two or three years ago. As the method of propagating silk is very well known, I shall say nothing of it here, but that the Armenian had planted the garden with mulberries four or five years before this, in less than two acres of ground; and he said, that he hoped this year would produce near a bale of good silk, and that in the year 1739, this infant factory had produced more than half a bale. The mulberry-trees were but very young, but the Armenian

menian got some assistance of mulberry leaves from other gardens. I overheard them saying, that the great Emperor Peter had planted a mulberry-garden, for the propagating of silk-worms, at no great distance from this place. At our return, I, thinking that I was very soon to depart from this city, proposed to visit the imperial silk-factory, not doubting that I would see it in much greater perfection, as it was first begun in Peter the Great's time. That I might meet with no hindrance or stop, I said nothing to any of the Governor's family, but privately caused my servant hire a boat to conduct me to this factory. Accordingly, at the distance of two versts from Astrachan, I was landed on a very pleasant island, on the top of which, near the middle, was built a very long house, or rather a long line of houses, with gardens on the north side, which, I was told, was the factory. Thither I went, in great hopes of being very agreeably entertained; but how much was I disappointed, when, in this great building, I only found a poor woman, and some miserable children, who told me, that her husband was gone a-fishing for their dinner; that the great silk-work of Peter the Great was reduced to eight or nine worms, only to keep up the name of it, and give bread to this poor, lazy, indolent, and ignorant family of beggars; but I understood, that an annual sum, allotted by Peter for propagating silk-worms,

pretty

pretty considerable, was appointed for the relief of some court beggars.

C H A P. LXV.

Concerning what happened in the Year 1740 at Astrachan.

I Began to prepare for my departure for St Petersburg: The Prince however encouraged my stay a little longer. At last, about three weeks after our arrival in Astrachan, one morning as I paid my respects to the Prince, and was fully determined to solicit my passport, the Governor put an Imperial decree from the medicine-chancery into my hand, and congratulated me by saying, that he was glad the chancery had given me a superior rank, by constituting me principal surgeon in the port of Astrachan, in the place of Mr Silvester Malloch my countryman, and commanding all the surgeons in the fleet, garrison and army, when they had no principal, or general surgeons in that kingdom, to take directions from me, and report regularly to me every month.

Though it is very natural for mankind to be very fond of fame, and of being preferred to places of honour and trust, especially when this is effected purely by merit; and though I deny not, that I was much pleased that the
medicine-

medicine-chancery took such singular notice of me, who, without any sollicitation, had advanced me, though I had only served four years, to be director to many very able surgeons, who had served the greatest part of their lives ; yet I thought I could perceive that this had been effected by some secret services of the Governor, and made free not to tell him as much; and added, that his Highness might easily think how disagreeable it must be to any man to have all his hopes at once frustrated, and that by people of whom he had deserved better treatment.

The Prince, ever the same man, smiled, and told me, that he had indeed wrote to his friend the archiator, returned him thanks for sending me to have the care of him and his command, and warmly observed the care I ever had taken of all the sick intrusted to me, and particularly of the advice I had given to defend the people under his command from the plague, at a time when our very near neighbours were suffering so much. He said, that he had prevailed upon me to attend the Princess and two of her sick children to Astrachan, and could not help expressing some uneasiness at being obliged to part with me there : And lastly, that he had intreated the archiator to ward off any reproof which I might be liable to from the admiralty, by some order from the chancery approving of what I had done ; and concluded by saying,
that

that he indeed thought the archiator had sent this order for these reasons; but that, as he had brought me to Astrachan, he would use all his power and policy to get me removed, whenever it should please heaven to remove himself; having said this, he put a letter from the archiator to him, in Latin, into my hands, and retired to business of more consequence.

When I had read the archiator's letter, I could entertain no manner of doubt that the Prince had told me the truth; especially when I considered the whole conduct of this illustrious person, which was ever directed by honour and truth. I next perused the ukanse, or imperial order, and by it observed, that, about twenty years before this, the plague had made very great havock in Astrachan, and therefore required that I should, with the greatest diligence, take all care to prevent this disease from appearing again, and immediately report to the chancery my having received the imperial decree, and what I found necessary to be done to prevent the plague being brought into that country. In this order I was informed, that the medicine-chancery, by a memorial of the same date, had given notice to the college of admiralty, that I was appointed by the hospital in Astrachan, in the place of the principal surgeon Malloch, and requiring the college to cause the commander of the port receive me in that capacity, and to give notice of the same to every

one concerned ; lastly, to dismiss Mr Malloch from the admiralty's service, who was to be employed in St Petersburg.

I considered Mr Malloch's interest. He was married, and had a wife and children ; I therefore supposing that he might not know of this, and, unprepared, might receive orders to march from Astrachan to St Petersburg in three days warning, with his family, (such positive and peremptory orders being frequently issued, many of which I have, to my very great loss, experienced ;) I for these reasons, without loss of time, went to Mr Malloch, and shewed him the orders I had just received, no doubt thinking it would give him great joy to go to St Petersburg, and time to sell off all his household furniture to the best advantage ; but in this I was very much mistaken. I presently saw his colour go and come, and, from a chearful serenity, he was quite over-clouded, nor could he hide the confusion he was in from the most ignorant person, although he would gladly have made me believe that he was quite satisfied. In short, that very evening, he had interest enough with the officers, by the fleet, to get a courier dispatched to St Petersburg, without loss of time ; and, it was said, with very respectable presents to the gentlemen of the quill, who, though many of them have suffered even death for taking bribes, bestirred themselves effectually in his cause. They found

found it however quite impossible to retain him by the admiralty-hospital, but constituted him chief surgeon over the garrison-hospital, and those of marching regiments, commanding that he and I should monthly communicate to one another whatever happened remarkable in our separate commands; and that if any infectious alarming fevers should happen, in such a case, we were to lose no time in consulting together; and immediately, by written reports, to acquaint the government and admiralty, what we thought most proper to be done, and to send a succinct report of every thing to the medicine-chancery.

Although the medicine-chancery had been very expeditious, the admiralty writers kept back the orders from being sent, eighteen months, as will afterwards appear. In the mean time, I had nothing to do but give attendance to my private patients, and, though I got no salary till orders were dispatched from the admiralty for that purpose, yet at last I received every farthing; and, having spare time, made double that sum by my private patients.

In the month of May, when the air was very serene and extremely hot, being invited, I went a-hunting with many gentlemen, and the Prince's two eldest sons. The heat, being greater than any I had ever experienced, obliged me to let down the brims of my hat, and take off my periwig. At our return,

only

only the Governor's children and I, out of the whole company, who were not accustomed to such hot air, complained of a pungent pain, heat, and itchiness in our faces; but my head, being close shaved, and shoulders, were as bad as my face. The Princess anointed her children with fresh butter, but I took no great notice of it: However, next day they were much better, but I suffered a smart *erysipelas* on all these parts, and at last lost the *epidermis*, which prevented my hunting, except in a morning very early, before the heat grew to great height. I used frequently, in a morning, to go in company with the Governor's eldest son, to shoot. One morning we went to a morass betwixt a rising ground and the Volga, on the banks of which many Kalmucks had formed a camp. As there was a great scarcity of water-fowl, we thought proper to separate, to no great distance however. I unknowingly approached a hollow place, where many dogs were making a breakfast on a dead Kalmuck. The dogs instantly attacked me; I fired my gun among them, but, though I killed one, it had no effect in frightening the rest; I therefore was obliged, with my clubbed fowling piece, to keep them off, by turning round, which exercise I could not have performed long, if the young Prince had not perceived my danger, and rescued me by firing among them. In the mean time, I loaded, whilst they surrounded

rounded him, and gave them one other discharge, which diminished their number, and possibly wounded others. After this they fled to their masters, and we returned home, both in great fright.

In the afternoon, in company with some young officers, to whom we had related this affair, we went upon the banks of the Volga, and, with our pistols, did not leave a Kal-muck dog alive within two miles of Astrachan*.

The Prince I mentioned above, was the same who lately was minister from Russia to the Court of Great Britain, and, at present, I am agreeably informed, is vice-chancellor to the Empire of Russia. Prince Alexander, for that is his name, was then indeed a most promising youth; wherefore, I am not surprised at his present elevation, for he was early and effectually taught the beauty of virtue and the deformity of vice, had naturally noble sentiments, which were improved and brought to perfection by the great example of his illustrious parents.

* I mention this trifling affair, that the reader may see how dangerous it is to go near these dogs accustomed to eat human bodies. It may appear trifling to some, and very useful to others.

C H A P. LXVI.

*A Continuation of what happened in the Year
1740.*

ABOUT the month of June, the brave Kalmuck Prince Donduk Ambo died, it was said, of a fever. The Russian court now intended to appoint one named Donduk Datchee, Prince over the Kalmucks. They had kept him in Casan many years in a princely manner, had caressed him much, with a view to get him so far in the interest of Russia, as to persuade the Kalmucks to live in cities and villages on the banks of the Volga, and no more wander about the desert in tents.

Donduk Ambo's lady, a Circassian by birth, descended of one of the most illustrious families in Circassia, was of a different opinion. She had five children to Donduk Ambo, and very naturally wished that her children should succeed their father; and therefore at present summoned all the Kalmuck chiefs to attend at her tent. They frankly enough espoused her cause, and determined to keep near her person. It was said, at this time, that she had a body of at least 40,000 men, all warriors, who had been tried under the orders of the late Donduk Ambo. She encamped on the west side of the Volga, over-
against

against Astrachan, till the beginning of August, and then marched through the desert south to the borders of Circassia, where they wintered, and where I now leave them till next year.

In the month of August, one named Anastatius, a Greek merchant, arrived in Astrachan from Buchara: He gave privately an account to the Governor, that, under pretence of going to trade in different parts of Tartary, for which purpose he had obtained proper passports from Kuli Khan, who, he said, had conquered Buchara and Chiva, which indeed was very true. He said, that Kuli Khan had caused make a very strict enquiry among the merchants who were acquainted with the deserts betwixt Chiva and Astrachan, about the distance, water, provisions, the nations who inhabit these deserts, and wanted to know if it was possible to march a great army from thence to Astrachan; and he, Kuli Khan, further enquired of Anastatius many things concerning the forces and strength of Astrachan. I say, under pretence of going into different parts of Tartary, Anastatius obtained a passport from the Shach, but, as soon as he thought himself to be out of danger of being taken by any Persian party, he directed his course straight to Astrachan, to acquaint the government of their danger. The governor was well satisfied that no trust was to be put in the friendly messages which were frequently

frequently sent to Russia by that tyrant ; as for honour, he never laid claim to any. At this time the Shach had an ambaffador at the court of Russia, and was fending two who were in Kizlaar with twenty elephants, and many valuable presents to the Emprefs and her minifters, being part of the fpoils he had taken from the Great Mogul. But all thefe figns of friendship fignified very little, fince it was very well known, that, upon the pretence of friendship, he had frequently invaded his neighbour's countries, and not only deftroyed all the beft of the natives, but effectually ruined thefe countries, and gave up the fubjects to the moft unparalleled cruelties ; and all the women, without diftinction, to fatisfy the luft of his brutal army. Soon after Aftanatus had brought this true information, it was corroborated by many others, who had fled from the cruelties of the monftrous Kuli Khan. He had marched his army againft Buchara in the year 1740 ; the Prince of which country, finding himfelf unable to ftand out againft fuch a numerous army of devils, caufed open the gates of his capital and the other cities belonging to him, and fued for mercy, which for once was granted, alledging that the Prince of Buchara was the true defcendent of Mahomet, and therefore ought to meet with adoration from all the true believers. Kuli Khan took nothing from this prince, but begged, that he
would

would grant him one of his daughters, that he might raise up a progeny of the descendants of Mahomet, who might in after ages sway the sceptre of Persia. This favour was easily obtained. From Buchara he marched directly for Chiva; but these brave ignorant people did not properly receive him, but upbraided him in the grossest manner, which raised his passion to such a height, that he sat down before their city, and in a short time made very many large breaches in the walls, and particularly overthrew one very strong battery, in which the deluded inhabitants placed their greatest hopes. When he was giving the necessary orders, and making dispositions for an immediate assault, the inhabitants begged for mercy, and opened their gates. The Shach, at this time proceeding with good policy, ordered strong guards to take possession of the gates, and, by sound of trumpets, discharged any of his army to enter the city, or in any shape molest the natives or foreign merchants, who might be found there: He next caused a strong party enter the city, patrol the streets, and place safeguards at the gates of all the caravanseras in it, forbidding either natives or foreigners, on pain of death, to appear in the streets, till further orders. Next he caused seize the Khan and his counsellors, whose heads were chopped off. Next day he declared a general pardon, and permitted foreigners to bring their

presents to his camp. This account I had from a countryman who was present, and believe every word to be true.

After he had conquered these inhabited countries, he could proceed no farther for deserts infested by wandering hoards of Tartars, which inhabited the deserts betwixt him and Astrachan; and understanding from every person, who knew these deserts, that it would be quite impossible to march his army thro' them, he garrisoned Chiva, and the other towns belonging to that principality, with a numerous body of men, and returned into Persia by the way of Astrabat, Mezanderan, Casbin and Ardevil, with a design, as was given out, to punish the rebellious Lefgee Tartars: Of which expedition, and his success, I shall give the history in a more proper place.

C H A P. LXVII.

Continuation of what happened in the Year 1740.

UPON being well assured of the truth of Anastatius's information, the careful Governor lost no time in acquainting the court, and in causing strong lines to be drawn round the south of Astrachan, at the distance of one verst from the city, well strengthened with batteries, upon which cannon were fixed. He sent into the desert many parties of
dragoons

dragoons and irregulars, to watch the motions of whoever passed these desarts, and to bring him all intelligence. He dispatched orders to the resident and consul in Persia, requiring them to spare no cost to get all the intelligence possible of the designs of Kuli Khan.

In the latter end of July, nineteen elephants arrived on the west banks of the Volga, with an ambassador called Houssein Khan, and a great number of attendants, in their way to St Petersburg. The principal ambassador, Sadar Khan, a great favourite of the Shach, died of a flux at Kizlaar, and the one who came with the elephants, wanted much to have wintered in Astrachan, threatening to return to his master in case of a denial; but the Governor let him know, that in Astrachan there was neither provision nor conveniencies for his retinue, being five hundred men and elephants; that he was at full liberty, either to proceed on his way to St Petersburg, or return, when he should be escorted with four regiments of dragoons under the orders of Major general Apraxin, who had conveyed them from Kizlaar to this place. The only liberty which this ambassador could obtain, was to be permitted to go into a bagnio with a few of his followers. During his stay in Astrachan, (which was only a few hours,) all care was taken, that neither Persians nor Tartars were permitted to go to him, except such in whom the Governor could confide, and

and who had their instructions given them. I went over the river to see these monsters, in company with the field-apothecary, and as we could not speak with the Persians, and the dragoons being at some distance from the elephants, because the horses were terrified for them, we went to one who seemed to be the largest, with two smaller female ones, one on each side. They were all chained by the hinder legs with strong iron chains. The male elephant made great noise, and with his trunk struck the ground so very strongly, that we thought the earth trembled. Little did we know the danger we were in, nor the reason of all this passion, when a little Indian got up, from among the hay which the beasts were eating, with a lance in his hand, made signs for us to retire, spoke angrily to the elephant, and then thrust the spear many times into his sides. At last, after he had thus punished him, he again spoke, but the beast did not seem to relish this treatment, wherefore he began again to wound him with a very broad spear, when at length the monster made a particular kind of noise, and laid his left fore leg outward, upon which the Indian crept, till he got on his back, from whence he moved forward, till he was seated right behind his ears; then he took an ax, such as we break sugar with, only on the opposite side to the cutting edge, was a pike about a finger-length, with which he beat the beast on
the

the head, and spoke to him betwixt every blow, till he had punished him sufficiently. A man passing by, who spoke the Russian and Indian language, told us, that we had been in great danger, and that the beast was very angry that we approached so near the females; that this elephant was the only one in the number, who was not as yet rightly tamed, and therefore very dangerous. This was not saying much for the natural sagacity of the elephant, though ever so wild, to be jealous of the apothecary and me with his mistresses; but, on the other hand, it is certain, that those who are well tamed, and used with mankind, do behave in a very extraordinary manner. An instance of which, for the entertainment of the reader, I'll venture to give as I was informed by General-major Apraxin. It is this :

When they went out of Kizlaar, many of the inhabitants went to see the elephants; among the rest was a self-sufficient proud priest, strutting with great stateliness to expose his importance to the common people. This clod of pride the general spied, and privately sent one of his servants to desire the governor of a very large elephant, but quite tame and docile, to frighten the priest without hurting him. At the Indian's pronouncing the word of direction, the elephant reared his long trunk in the air, made a great noise, and approached the priest. The multitude fled,
but

but the elephant kept close to the priest, who fled into the desert. As he passed near a large pit made for catching wild beasts (which will be described when I arrive in Circassia) about eight or nine feet deep, he ran to it, and jumped in, there thinking he would be safe. The beast followed, and immediately, I suppose as directed, threshed on each side of the pit, which was loose ground, so violently, that the earth tumbled down upon him; wherefore, he was obliged to scramble up, lest he had been buried alive. However, when he was very tired, and effectually frightened, the elephant went away, and the priest was carried home, as was reported, in a very homely stinking condition, nor did he recover his fright soon.

I saw these creatures go away, conveyed by four regiments: They moved from the south side of a hill, northward, up the banks of the Volga. It is incredible how frightened the Russian horses were for them, the stoutest dragoons could not command them to go near. On the back of one of the largest tame elephant, they had a machine fixed, where two or three men could sit, railed about. I was told, that the ambassador, in company with one or two more, used sometimes, in a pleasant day, to sit there for a day's journey. Although, as has been observed, their chains were very weighty, yet they dragged them with great ease; and their ordinary walk requires

quires an ordinary horse to trot, to keep pace with them. As that animal is so well known, I shall say no more about it at present.

C H A P. LXVIII.

The Author treats of the different anecdotes as they happened in the course of this year.

I Had been in Astrachan about two or three weeks, when one afternoon Pastor Wise payed me a visit: He asked me, If I was of the reformed religion? I answered him in the affirmative. He said that he had been informed so, and told me that he rejoiced at it, and said he doubted not that I adhered to the kirk of Scotland. I said I did, and at present believed I should not change, tho' I began to entertain a very good opinion of the church of England. He said that of the two he loved or esteemed the kirk best, but that he also had a very great opinion of the purity of the doctrine of the church of England; and that the English church had produced some of the most learned divines in the world. Then he asked me, Why I had not been at church since my arrival in Astrachan? I said, that I understood the German language very imperfectly, nor did I know the method of worship in their church, never
having

having once been in any, that I scarcely could read the German print, and that I looked upon every one, who pretended to join in divine worship with others whom they did not understand, to be hypocrites. He begged I would entertain no such opinion, that I would come to church, and made me a present of a German bible, saying, that if I read it frequently, God would assist me soon to understand the language, and, without giving me time to return an answer, immediately kneeled down, and prayed. He was, I dare say, a very good man ; but a great enthusiast. I accepted of his bible, and indeed soon learned the German language, but this was owing to my daily keeping company with the Germans in Astrachan.

Mr Wise told me, that he had been preacher to Count Muinich, but that, at the earnest desire of Brigadier Younger, and the gentlemen belonging to the garrison, he came there: But said, that it was expected the brigadier would soon leave this place, and, when that should happen, he would go with him ; because Colonel Pile, the eldest officer belonging to the garrison, bore him a grudge, nor had paid him his salary, according to his subscription, for one year bypast, and that many others had done the same thing ; because he had reproved him for seizing the effects belonging to one of Prince Dolgaruka's family, after his death, though he had left
a wife

a wife in no very opulent circumstances. He said, that the Prince had a great liking to the colonel's lady, and that she had, in his last days, persuaded him to this, and that he had granted a will in her favour, in prejudice of his own wife, which he thought not only disgraced themselves, but would have brought a reproach on the foreigners, if he had not burnt the will, and so forced them to deliver up the Prince's effects to his widow. I asked him, How he attempted to burn the will? or how he got possession of it? He said, that foreigners were so universally scandalized on this account, that he went to the house and expostulated with them; but finding that this served only to inflame them against him, he desired to see this will, that he might say whether it was genuine: Accordingly the will was produced, and when Madam had gone into another room, he committed it to the fire in presence of the colonel, who was so old and stiff that he could not reach the fire till it was consumed: And this finished, and said, he presently withdrew, and never entered the house again. They swore revenge, but were obliged to restore every thing belonging to the deceased Prince; and hitherto the brigadier had protected him. Of this I gave our governor a very succinct account, who next day sent, and desired the pastor would dine with him: He sent also for the colonel, and after dinner gently spoke of

that affair, and told Mr Wise, that if any, in either garrison or army, had signed a call for him to come as parson to Astrachan, and had annexed a certain sum of money : And if, at any time, any of these officers refused to pay the sum they had voluntarily subscribed; upon Mr Wise's complaint, he would order payment immediately, and a stop to be put to their salary till all was clear. He told him also, that he would protect him, and every honest man, as long as he governed that kingdom, let their religion be what they pleased. The governor pronounced this sentence with such a determinate countenance, that next day the poor parson got all his demands paid up : But the colonel and apothecary swore they never would enter the church as long as Mr Wise was there ; which oath was also broken, when the apothecary buried his son. By their rules, the dead body is brought into church, when a short sermon upon such occasions is preached before burial : In that sermon, the pastor lashed them very severely before the whole congregation. He said, that men that had bound themselves by oath never to enter the church so long as pastor Wise preached there, but God had determined that they should enter the church either dead or alive. He said, that whoever were so foolish as to make such promises, did not attend to the will of God, who it was evident, by the melancholy example before us,

was

was determined to bring them upon such occasions, and advised them rather to walk into the church, as their duty required, or else God would cause them to be carried into this house when dead, and when it was dubious whether they had a chance for salvation. He, I thought, upon this occasion, carried his resentment too far, and, in place of cementing differences, made, as he well might have foreseen, the breach not only wider; but provoked other people, and in short was soon thereafter, in company with the good brigadier, obliged to leave Astrachan. I was informed that he went to Prussia, and was much caressed in that kingdom.

C H A P. LXVIII.

Concerning Monsieur Pierre Posset and his Adventures.

I Had been but a short time in Astrachan, when I was made acquainted with a French refugee called Pierre Posset, who gave me the following relation of his adventures. He was at that time about sixty years of age; and Mrs Posset, both French, was fifty. Mr Posset said, that when he was very young, his father was taken up and broken on the wheel, after he had suffered unheard of tortures; and a small estate which belonged to their

their family was annexed to the crown of France, because he openly professed the Reformed Religion, nor would renounce it to the last. Mr Posset was, when his father suffered, nine or ten years old : He was his only child, and was sent to a monastery, to be educated according to the Roman principles : But after the priests had half starved him, whipped, and otherways tortured him, finding they could not prevail, they appointed him to work hard in their gardens daily under severe discipline : At last, however, he got an opportunity, and, in great danger, escaped. He said, that as he had great reason to be dissatisfied with their unheard of cruelties, he lost no opportunity of doing them all the injury he possibly could during his stay there, which was about three years, and very seldom was suspected. When he had escaped, he went begging thro' France, till he was pressed into the King's service, as a dragoon, where he served till the King of France lost a battle on this side the Alps. At which time, the Reformed, who were in the royal army, deserted in a body, and fled into Tirol, and thence dispersed through Germany and other countries. Posset took his road to Holland, from thence into England ; betwixt which countries, having gotten some small stock, and credit from the refugees in London, he traded some years, and married in Holland. At last, he went to
Russia,

Russia, and, as sutler, he followed the Russian army to the siege of Asoph, which was the first expedition Peter the Great made against the Turks. When Asoph was taken, Possët had interest to be appointed, with a good salary, overseer of the vine-gardens in Asoph, and continued there till Asoph was again restored to the Turks, by the unfortunate treaty of the Pruth. During this time, Possët, who had knowledge in commerce, had made a pretty fortune: But inclined to go to Astrachan, where he was appointed principal over the Emperor's vine-gardens, by a contract during his life, by which he was to have good houses to dwell in, and the whole produce of the garden for his maintenance, except what fruits might be required by the Court, and forty men maintained at the Empire's expence to work in the garden, which garden was at least forty acres of the best ground.

Pierre was thus employed long before I arrived in Astrachan, and also continued in the same way when I left it; where he had made a very great fortune, and had a family of two sons and a daughter. His eldest son was lame, and died there, his second, Cornelius Possët was sent as sutler to Asoph, the last time it was besieged and taken, as has been already noticed, by the late ever victorious Field Marshal Count Lacy. Young Cornelius, who abhorred being a sutler,

ler, soon spent all the money his father had intrusted him with, which was the sum of 2000 rubles. He gave credit indiscriminately to all the officers who were in want, and only took their notes of hand. When he was reduced, and his father would not answer his demands, he entered into the army as volunteer. It was not long before he was advanced to the rank of serjeant, and, what is very remarkable three or four days preceeding the capitulation of Asoph; he went a volunteer to the storming of a breach three different times, and, agreeable to the Russian regulations, every time he was advanced one rank higher; so that when the city capitulated, he was captain of dragoons, and in that quality marched with us to Persia, in which expedition he behaved so well that he was advanced to a majority when we returned.

Old Posset in his younger days suffered much misery, and, as he has frequently told me, escaped many imminent dangers: But one he escaped at Astrachan, which was well known to all the inhabitants, and which for its singularity, I think deserves to be related, as it will I doubt not be agreeable to the reader.

I said, that he had a good house in the vine-gardens. This house, in which he lived, was built of timber, two stories high, which formed one side of a square, facing which
was

was another house, in which the labourers of the garden dwelt, and a large gate, which formed another side; stables and other necessary houses made a third side, and the fourth was finished with palisadoes betwixt it and the garden. Posset was universally accounted one of the richest men in Astrachan, tho' he made no great shew of it: He was the principal banker in or about the city, and his house was well furnished with the best and largest quantity of silver-plate and porcelain.

One night, as they were going to bed, a violent knocking at the door summoned him to enquire into the cause. He was answered, that it was an express from the Governor, requiring his immediate attendance in his palace, and that there was an order for him. Suspecting no harm, he opened the door, and soon was made sensible, that he was at the mercy of a band of robbers, consisting of 40 men, armed with knives and bludgeons. They told him, that they had carefully secured his men by barricading the door, and placing strong guards there, and also at the window; therefore desired him, without further trouble, to give them all the money and value in his house. Posset, seeing there was no help, assured them, that, if they would spare his life and Mrs Posset's, he would instantly deliver to them every thing in his house. This was agreed to, and Posset kept his word, but they, not regarding their promise, most unmercifully

unmercifully beat both Mr and Mrs Poffet, stripped her naked, and tied her to a tree in the garden, though it was extremely cold weather. They also tied Mr Poffet's hands and feet together; and, as one of them was taking a long knife out of its sheath, to cut his throat, whilst he was putting up his supplications to heaven for the safety of his soul, all hopes of relief having vanished, an old soldier, whom Poffet kept to take care of the stoves, and do any little work about the house, had escaped the robbers search in the garret; he made fast the entry into the garret, and, from a window, called out, as if he had been directing a captain how he might dispose of his men to catch all the robbers. The robbers overhearing that an effectual assistance was so near, in the greatest consternation and hurry, evacuated the house, and made their escape through the vine-garden. The soldier, seeing that the coast was clear, lost no time in letting the labouring people out of their confinement, and releasing Poffet and his wife, almost frozen to death. The villains had carried off all his plate and money. Poffet not thinking himself as yet secure, escorted by a few of his workmen, went to the city about half a mile distant, and applied to the commandant, who sent a company of soldiers to watch his house. Another company was directed to patrol the streets with great secrecy; while other soldiers, dressed

dressed as boors, were sent into such houses as
 sold liquor, with orders to secure all such
 boors as changed rubles or ducats, for exa-
 mination. Before noon next day, the great-
 est part were taken, and Possët recovered al-
 most every thing, though, no doubt, he was
 at some expence in employing so many peo-
 ple. The soldiers got little more than meat
 and drink, because they are not allowed to
 take money for doing their duty. These mi-
 serable banditti, after the most exquisite tor-
 ture, finished their wretched lives, by being
 broken on the wheel, or hung up by the ribs,
 till they expired, except a few who died in
 prison. After this, Mr Possët never durst live
 in the country, but retired to the city, where
 he was living when I left Astrachan, in the
 year 1748. Scarcely any thing is more a-
 greeable to mankind than to know the man-
 ners, customs, or fashions of different nations;
 and this curiosity prevails with the bulk of
 the human race all the world over, therefore
 the following need to surprize none.

Mr Possët was accustomed to hire from the
 Tartar Muzsas, a number of their men, in
 the spring time, to dress the vine-gardens, for
 he had fine gardens his own property, into
 which he never permitted the labourers be-
 longing to the Empire to enter, lest they might
 have accused him of employing them in dres-
 sing his own gardens, which would have risk-
 ed his forfeiting them: He therefore was well

acquainted with the Tartar Muzfas, who had been many years hospitably entertained in his, Mr Posslet's, house; they therefore prevailed with him to go with Mrs Posslet, in the summer-time, to their camp, to take a dinner, obliging themselves to put no restraint on either of them, which the difference of religion, (they being all Mahometans) might have probably occasioned. It is well enough known, that the Mahometans are very careful to keep themselves very clean, by bathing, depilation, or taking off the hair which grows about the greater emunctories upon the body, and by frequent daily ablutions, particularly before and after repasts. At Mr and Mrs Posslet's arrival, dinner was served up, consisting principally of mutton and fowls. After dinner was over, Mrs Posslet expressed some desire to visit their wives, which was complied with. She accordingly was introduced into a large tent, where many of the Muzfas wives had assembled, no doubt to see and converse with a Christian, with whom they very rarely, if ever, had any correspondence. The men had not long retired into their former tent, to converse about their affairs, till they were alarmed with a great screaming among the women, but Mrs Posslet's voice was heard much louder than any of the rest; whereupon Posslet, forgetting that it was dangerous and very rude, immediately ran to, and, without any hesitation, entered the womens tent, where
he

he spied the Tartar women sitting opposite to Mrs Posset, exposing what modesty requires should be hid, and two of them wanted much to explore what Mrs Posset would have kept secret. Mr Posset immediately rescued his wife, and the Tartars were no ways dissatisfied with Posset's going into their wives tent. Mr Posset said, that he frequently went and visited the Tartars, but Mrs Posset never could be prevailed upon to repeat her visits. The old woman acknowledged the truth of this. Historical examples, of themselves not disagreeable, serve not only to amuse young readers, but more effectually to fix in their memories the customs and manners of countries, and, as it were, force them to learn geography better than any system whatever; which is one reason why I sometimes have related stories of themselves not very interesting, for which, I hope, the learned reader, if he has good principles, will pardon me.

C H A P. LXX.

Concerning different Affairs which happened this Year.

AS no orders were sent from the admiralty, appointing me to take care of the sick belonging to the port, I had much time on
my

my hands, and thought it my duty to give my opinion about the proper way to prevent the plague from making its appearance in Astrachan. I therefore gave in a petition to the præcawse or government's chancery, and sent a copy of it to the medicine-chancery, chiefly representing, that we could not be free of the danger of getting the plague in such a very hot kingdom as Astrachan, unless the inhabitants were ordered to keep every thing as clean and free from putrefaction as possible, both without and within doors, which I imagined would not be difficult to be done, if the following rules were carefully attended to. I observed that the common people buried their dead in the churchyards, both within and without the city, very superficially, scarcely covering the coffin half a foot with earth; which, considering the looseness of the soil, gave the greatest chance to promote the disease we were so much afraid of; and that many were buried in churchyards not fenced about, so that horses and carriages drove frequently over the graves, and, in this dry climate, rendered the earth finely pulverized, which was easily carried away by the first gust of wind, exposed the coffins to view a very few days after interment: That the noisome sinell, and a visitation of the churchyards, would prove what I had asserted, to be true. I therefore desired, that, without loss of time, this might be altered, by ordering the church-

churchyards to be fenced in, or by preventing wheel'd machines or horses ever to pass through these places ; and lastly, to order the graves to be made very deep. I next represented the loathsome manner in which the Kalmucks exposed their dead, not only in the neighbourhood of Astrachan, but under the walls of the city, where dogs, crows, and swine were daily to be seen feeding upon them, to the great shame and danger of a well regulated government. I therefore required, that, since it was contrary to their law to bury, they should be obliged either to burn them, or cast them into the Volga. I next took notice of the dead-house being not a verſt diſtant from the city, the putrid exhalations of which, when the wind blew, might be obſerved to be very offensive, on the leeſide, at the diſtance of three verſts. This being an unanſwerable proof that the inhabitants of the city were daily obliged to reſpire air much ſaturated with one of the well known cauſes of the plague, I begged that, whatever the archbiſhop and his prieſts might alledge to the contrary, the preſent dead-house ſhould be filled up, and a new one erected at a reaſonable diſtance from the city. Laſtly, I demonſtrated the danger of permitting the merchants to form many great ſtacks of fat fiſh about the city, and begged that a ſtop might be put to this practice ; and that the ſtreets and houſes in and about the city be kept
sweet

sweet and clean. I next submitted to their consideration, Whether it would not considerably tend to the preservation of this kingdom, if they gave directions to their residents and consuls attending the empires and principalities of the neighbouring nations, to make known to the princes and others concerned, in the most express and public manner, that none of their subjects should be admitted into the kingdom of Astrachan, unless they had a testimonial of health, subscribed by the Russian resident or consul? That, to prevent effectually any people from entering into the kingdom, strong guards should be appointed in different places, to cause all such, who came without the proper testimonial, remain in quarantine for three months in summer, and six weeks during the winter.

My petition met with all the success I could expect from the governor of Astrachan, and also from the medicine-chancery. I was the better pleased, that all the inhabitants were quite well assured it was designed for their good. None objected to any thing but the archbishop and Kalmucks. The first said, that none had a right to appoint him a place where to form the dead-house; and the last, that it was disagreeable to their religion to be obliged to throw their dead into the Volga; but both were forced to submit to these regulations. The proud bishop bore me a grudge for
this

this ever after, tho' he could not have shewed his dislike to one who valued it less than I did.

The archbishop, three or four months after this, childishly enough, intended to affront me in the following manner: He had a house and church, built upon one of the branches of the Volga, distant about one verst east from Astrachan, near to which were some swamps and lakes, well stored with a variety of water-fowl: Thither I went in a boat, to take some diversion with my fowling-piece. At the hearing of a shot, the bishop sent five or six servants, with orders to take my piece from me: As they approached, I drew near to my boat, which lay covered under the bank of the river, out of sight. When I was within call of the crew, I demanded what the priestly people wanted? With much impudence, they said, that the archbishop had sent them to take my gun from me, because the ground belonged to the church, and he allowed no creature to be killed there. I said, that I was certain the ground was the Empress's, whom I had the honour to serve, and that I had a very good right to divert myself innocently there, as well as in other places, and desired them, if they valued their safeties, to keep at a due distance, otherways I was determined first to let them experience what the gun was charged with, and next to treat them as robbers. Our discourse was overheard by five sailors who were in the boat; they instantly made

made their appearance, armed with stiffened ropes in their hands, which the sailors in Russia frequently carry in their pockets, and therewith, without the smallest ceremony, exercised their dexterity upon the backs of these fools so well, that they soon took to their heels, and happy was he who first reached the bishop's house; for the sailors would not leave off, though the bishop called to them from his window. After which time I never was more troubled by him.

C H A P. LXXI.

Concerning the Death of the Empress Anna Ivanovna, &c.

ON the 17th of October, old stile, the Empress Anna Ivanovna died at St Petersburg. She was the only daughter of the Czar Ivan or John (elder brother of Peter the Great) who survived Peter the second. She was married to Frederick-William, Duke of Courland, in the year 1710, on the 13th of February O. S. but the Duke died in January 1711, and left no children. His Lady, the Dutchesse, reigned in Courland till the year 1730, when, after the death of Peter the second, she was declared Empress on the 29th of January the same year. As this affair, so far as I know, never has been made public,

public, and, as I was informed of the following things by many persons who had a share in them, especially as I hope it will be agreeable to the reader, I shall give him an account of what passed at this time, as briefly as I can.

At the death of Peter the second, the lords, who were at the head of affairs, detached to Courland many noblemen of the first families and rank in Russia, among whom was Prince Michael Golitzin, the same with whom I went to Astrachan. They conducted her from Courland to a village within seven versts of Moscow, with all the ceremonious pomp to which her high birth intitled her. Here however she was desired to halt, till she had signed an instrument, which was made out by the great lords in the regency, by which she was declared Empress of all the Russias, &c. according to usual form; but it was required, that she, on her part, should oblige herself, and her heirs, to take into her and their councils, eight or nine noblemen, chosen from the families of Russia who were at the head of affairs at this time, of which number the Dolgaratti were the principal. The Empress did not relish this unexpected attack upon her power, which she thought was her birth-right; but, by the advice of her friends, the chief of whom was a Courland gentleman, Mr Byron, now Duke of Courland, she signed the deed, hoping for better times, and made ready for

her entry into Moscow next day, through many superb triumphal arches prepared on this occasion.

The lords of regency, full of security, as they thought, next morning summoned the guards, and all nobility and gentry, to make their appearance in the metropolitan church, in order to confirm this agreement or deed by their oaths. A gentleman, Vasilie Nikitetch Tatishoff, afterwards governor of Astrachan, who was only a lieutenant, standing near the altar, as soon as the deed was read, and the gentlemen first in rank were desired to sign it, and give their oaths, declaring, that they would stand by it with their lives and fortunes, unassisted by any, jumped into the chancel, and, with a loud voice, called to the guards to hear what he had to say. The great lords ordered to knock him down; but the guards surrounded him with their drawn broad swords, and declared, that Mr Tatishoff should be heard, and threatened to put any to death who should offer the least hurt to him. Silence ensuing, Mr Tatishoff began, by telling them what they very well knew, viz. That their government of Russia was absolute, and suited best with their empire: That the guards, who were gentlemen, other gentlemen through the whole empire, and many of the nobility, were altogether excluded from this settlement: That only nine families were mentioned, nine out of which

which were to be chosen as hereditary counsellors, without whose advice and approbation, the Empress and all her successors could do nothing of the smallest importance. From this he drew a certain consequence, that none would have the least chance for preferment in the empire, but the cadets of their families, or the most obsequious to their interests; and consequently he, Tatishoff, and all other gentlemen, might, with certainty, bid farewell to the hopes of advancement, let their faithful services deserve ever so much. He said, that in place of one monarch, he was sorry to observe a design of having ten. He put the guards in remembrance of Peter the Great, who, without respect to families, provinces, or different nations, indiscriminately advanced every one as he deserved: Wherefore he begged of the guards to go with him, and bring the Empress to her palace with honour, assuring them, that if she voluntarily should part with any share of her power, in that case he would make no objection. Upon this, the guards, with Tatishoff, and a very great number of nobility, went and brought the Empress to the palace, where Mr Tatishoff was, from a lieutenant, declared privy-counsellor, which is equal in rank to lieutenant-general. The great lords were banished at present, but afterwards many of them were punished with cruel deaths.

This

This Empress ruled with justice, but great severity. If she at any time shewed favour, it was chiefly to foreigners. She kept all her lifetime her Christian neighbours in awe and peace ; and carried on a most successful war, full of glory, against the Turks. In the year 1739, she got her niece, the Duke of Mecklenburgh's daughter, Princess Anne, married to Prince Ernest Ulrich of Wolfenbittel, and declared their issue heirs to the throne of Russia. At the Empress Anne's death, she declared Prince Ivan, or John, the only son of the aforesaid Prince and Princess, heir to the empire ; his mother his governess till of age, and Byron, now Duke of Courland, regent, till the Emperor should attain his seventeenth year of age. The news of the Empress's death, and a copy of her will, were sent by a young Courland gentleman to Astrachan, and were received with awful silence. Next day we were all obliged to go to the great church there, to be sworn before the archbishop, and sign our oaths, declaring that we were determined to spend our lives and fortunes in defence of the late Empress's will, to maintain the Emperor Ivan on the throne, and the Duke of Courland regent of the empire, till the Emperor should attain his seventeenth year of age.

At this time, our Governor relieved a poor prisoner, who had been an ensign in the army when Peter the Great returned from his conquests

conquests in Persia. Peter gave out orders by the parole, and caused publish them by beat of drum, that, in the night time, if any person walking the streets should deny to answer the centinel's third summons, he had orders to fire upon him. When the orders were read to the ensign, young Puskoff, for that was his name, said, foolishly enough, that if the Emperor himself denied to answer the third summons, he would not hesitate to fire upon him. This was soon reported to the Emperor, who ordered him to be immured. He was accordingly put into a hole in the city wall, and the door built up with stone and lime; neither was there any other opening into that hole, except a slit in the wall, through which he received his meat. In this hole he had remained sixteen years, and in that time had lost his understanding; but, as he was a great enthusiast, the populace believed him also to have been inspired; for when he had been some time confined, he, not knowing a better way to get any thing to support nature, except what was allowed by the government, which was only very coarse rye-flour and a little salt, pretended to predict and tell fortunes, by which means, joined to his great profession of sanctity, he lived very well. Many thousands of people ran to see him taken out, and I went upon an opposite wall with some of Prince Golitzin's children, where I could have a good view, without any hazard.

zard. The soldiers first called to him to return thanks to heaven, assuring him, that Empress Anne was dead, and that the merciful Governor, Prince Golitzin, had given orders to restore him to liberty upon this occasion : Then they began to break down the door, and when it was open, he was informed of it, and ordered to come out, but he returned no answer ; whereupon a strong soldier entered into the hole, and brought him to the open air ; in doing which, Pushkin had very near killed him with the ram-rod of a gun which he was in possession of. He stared round, and asked many questions at the bystanders, and in particular, Whether they were not leading him to some cruel death ? But being at last convinced that the Prince had restored him to his liberty, and had ordered them to carry him to the bagnio to be washed clean, and dressed in new cloaths, which were ready for him, he, in the most fervent and sincere manner, rendered thanks to heaven, and prayed for the prosperity of the merciful Governor's family. He had no sooner seen the metropolitan church, than he threw himself on the ground, with his head towards the church, and continued a long time rendering thanks to God for his deliverance ; then he rose, crossed himself many times, and went to the bagnio, of which he had much need, for he had not the colour of a man, and it was not easy to come near him, he smelt
fo

so disagreeably. After he had been washed, and dressed in clean new cloaths, he had great plenty of meat given him, of which he had no great need, for Prince Golitzin ordered him, and many other prisoners, meat from his own table daily. He at last had liberty given him to go where he pleased, and a room and bed provided for him in some of the servants apartments, with orders to take care of him. Every person expressed great satisfaction at the release of this man, and welcomed him by giving him strong liquor and spirits to drink, which soon put an end to his sufferings. Four days after he was taken out, I went into the hole, but though the door continued open, I could not draw my breath in it but with difficulty. It consisted of two apartments nearly square, the smallest being eight feet by six.

This settlement did not continue long, for, in the month of November, we received another uawse or royal order, acquainting the inhabitants, that the Duke of Courland was arrested, and sent into some place of safety, because he had intended to usurp the government by the most villainous means, &c. Lastly, that the Duchess of Brunswick, at the most humble desire of the ministry, senate, and all the orders of the first personages, and others of note in Petersburg, had taken the reins of government into her hands, until the Emperor her son should be of age ;
and

and that, as she was declared regent of the empire by the ministry and army, it was commanded that she should be declared regent thro' the kingdom of Astrachan, and that all ranks of people in the armies and fleet should give and subscribe their oaths to be obedient and faithful to her government, and should, to the risk of their lives and fortunes, by all means in their power, defend and maintain her in this high station, and zealously maintain the rights of her royal son and family. The Princess had, by the advice and consent of the ministry, appointed the Prince her husband to be generalissimo of all the armies in Russia, and, at the same time, had declared Count Muinich to be the first subject in Russia next the royal family, but that he was no longer to have any command in the army; and therefore required that the army in Astrachan should take notice of this, as no orders from him ought to be obeyed.

C H A P. LXXII.

An Account of the Fall of the Duke of Courland, Regent of Russia, as the Author was informed by creditable People, when he went to St Petersburg.

NO great changes happen in the world, but they are related very differently.
The

The following account of the fall of the Duke of Courland I had from people of very good reputation, and who were in St Petersburg at the time. The Russians were not satisfied that the Duke of Courland, a foreigner, and but lately a private gentleman, should be regent of Russia, and the royal family have no share of the government. Many, it was said, had spoken of this rather too freely, which was reported to the Duke, who, without loss of time, caused seize them, and sent them to the castle for examination. Representations in their favours from the Prince and Princess of Brunswick were not only disregarded, but ill taken. Jealousies, fears, and animosities ran now very high, so that, I was assured, none of the royal family durst take an airing, for fear of the regent. Five hundred men mounted guard for the protection and honour of each of the two courts every day, and the royal family did every thing which was in their power to secure their favour; whereas the Duke of Courland carried on affairs rather with a high hand, as he thought he was certain of keeping this power, and that the only way to do so would be to rule with a rod of iron. It was said, and believed by many, that he intended to cut off the royal family, and, by one way or other, to get the Princess Elisabeth to marry his eldest son. Be this as it will, the Prince and Princess of Brunswick being in this dangerous condition, and get-

ting notice that the regent had caused torture many of their friends in the castle, and had passed sentence of death upon some, who were ordered for execution in a few days, sent for the Field Marshal Count Muinich. They made him acquainted with every thing, with all the causes of their fears, and demanded his advice and assistance. He advised them that they should disclose their apprehensions to none, and promised that he would soon free them of their fears or lose his life in the attempt : Which, if he did, should never be a cause of making their situation in the smallest degree worse; therefore he desired that they would leave the execution of this affair to him. He had gone very privately from his own house to the palace, and took the same precaution in returning home.

Before this time, a misunderstanding had happened betwixt the Duke of Courland and the field marshal ; but, as the duke was now declared regent of the Empire, the field marshal thought it could not derogate from his honour to make the first advances to a reconciliation. He therefore, without loss of time, or the smallest hesitation, sent a letter to the regent professing great desire of being esteemed one of his friends, and that he would be glad to know when it would be convenient for his Highness to receive a visit.

Nothing

Nothing could possibly have happened so agreeable to the regent. He had not the least doubt of the count's sincerity, and wished above all things to make a man of his great abilities his friend: He therefore returned for answer, that he would be extremely glad to receive a visit from the count at all times, the sooner the better; and begged that he would favour him with his company that very day at dinner; because he had some affairs of the greatest consequence to lay before him.

At dinner, (for such an answer the count expected, and consequently obeyed the summons immediately) the count appeared extremely glad, and expressed much satisfaction at the happy reconciliation. The regent, no doubt thought himself a happy man, in having as he imagined, a person of the count's abilities, his declared and open friend. The highest marks of respect and friendship were professed, with the greatest shew of sincerity, on both sides, and they spent the afternoon together, taking a chearful glass, till late in the afternoon, when they parted with mutual satisfaction: The one that he had, as he thought, gained one of the greatest men in the Empire to be his trusty friend; the other, that he had lulled the regent into a notion of the greatest security. The regent begged that the count would make his visits very frequent, which the other assured him should

should be complied with, as long as they should be acceptable. The regent declared nothing could ever be more agreeable to him, but little did he dream of what very soon followed.

Soon after midnight, when most people are generally asleep, except such as are in pain or misery, card-players, drunkards, and villains of all kinds, the count in company of two or three trusty brave men went to the regent's palace. As he was lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of guards upon duty, and very well known to all the foldiers, he passed on to the guard-house, where he demanded to speak with the major, who was principal commander on duty, and who, it was thought, was well acquainted with the count's design, and fully resolved heartily to second him. They with a few more of the guards, whom the major could well trust, with great caution approached the bed-chamber, and soon forced open the door. It was said that the duke with his sword for a long time defended himself bravely, and the dutchess with a sabre wounding severals, till some rude foldiers knocked her on the head, and even after that with difficulty secured her at last ! Scarcely it ever happens otherways than that something very prodigious is related at the deaths or disgraces of great men, who have in some shape been eminent in the world ; and such stories are greedily

greedily swallowed down, and by the multitude, gain credit sooner than more probable history. That the Duke of Courland, who it was well enough known did not want good judgment, should upon such an occasion expose himself, lady, and family to immediate certain death, when he saw himself surrounded by so many brave men, may gain credit with some children, but scarcely with any other ; that the dutchess might have fallen into some outrageous fit I shall not dispute, but her so readily getting a sabre, where none were kept, and there performing military feats, carrying down all before her, till, only by accident, she was knocked on the head by a rude soldier : Whilst her brother-in-law, Gustavus Biron, bred a soldier, and naturally afraid of nothing, was caught making his escape through the garden, is too romantic for me to believe. In short, that they were all made prisoners and sent to Slusfelburgh, thence to Siberia, is very certain.

This event was indeed as sudden as unforeseen by the Duke of Courland : But it was most fortunate for the Royal family, and for many (some making their numbers exceed a hundred, others confining them to forty) gentlemen, related to the principal families in Russia, at that time confined in the castle, for it was asserted, and probably very truly, that many were to have been brought to the torture, and some to have suffered death the day

day following : So that it was no wonder to hear that the Russians rejoiced much at the downfall of the Duke of Courland. He was said to be a man of very good parts, but rather cruel ; it was thought it was purely by his counsel that the late Empress shewed so great disdain and cruelty to the most ancient and noble families in Russia : And I cannot help thinking there are many reasons in the course of the late reign to justify the Russians, and others for believing this. Whoever were well with the Duke, were also caressed by the Empress: but it was much more dangerous for any person to affront one of the Duke's servants than any of the Empress's. The Duke certainly ruled the cabinet, and by what happened in the course of this reign, it may be truly said that affairs for the good and glory of the Empire were carried on at a high rate, but then his ambition and cruelty rendered him odious to the Russians: and, though no wise man would speak his opinion, every one, even foreigners undoubtedly condemned such bad conduct, which made his fall regretted by none, but his immediate dependents. Was it not the highest ambition which made him not only advise the late Empress to appoint him regent ; but, contrary to all views of good policy, to maintain himself, which he saw he could not effect but by swimming thro' seas of blood, in the regency ? Was it good policy

policy to set himself upon a level, and even threaten the Royal Family, and at the same time, by all the ways and means which tyranny can effect, alienate the good dispositions, and opinions of the most ignorant of all the Russians, by the unparalleled cruel tortures daily inflicted upon, possibly the most illustrious and honourable, as well as innocent and industrious people in the Empire? It signifies very little what any despotic court gives out against a prisoner, where persons are examined, tried, condemned, and suffer, not in the eyes of the world, but, most secretly, by their enemies, who lay what ever crimes they may think fit to their charge; or if they suffer publicly, it is very well known that they are rendered incapable of speaking by gags driven into their mouths. The Duke of Courland was conscious to himself that he was not beloved by the Russians, and therefore probably wished for the regency, that he might have it in his power absolutely to crush all his enemies. But it seems he did not think that torturing and putting to cruel death so many men of different families, who only wished well to, and spoke well of the Royal Family, would raise him a greater number of enemies, and that they, added to the weight of the Royal Family, might one day prove too strong for a stranger and an alien! But if he had generously, and of himself given up his regency to the Grand Duchess, whose
natural

natural right it was, then he might have lived in great splendor and tranquillity in his dukedom of Courland, protected by the whole power of Russia: And probably his illustrious family would have been in safety at this day.

C H A P. LXXII.

A Continuation of what happened in the Year 1740, at St Petersburg and Astrachan.

I SHALL close this year with an account of what happened at St Petersburg and Astrachan, in relation to the Turkish and Persian ambassadors. The Turks dispatched from Constantinople a grand embassy, but being very late in the year, it was obliged to halt on the Turkish borders till the year 1741 of which I shall say no more till I take notice of the affairs which then happened.

I observed that two ambassadors had been sent by Kuli Khan this year with the elephants, one of whom died in Kizlaar. Kuli Khan however was determined to have two, therefore he dispatched another, said to be his cousin-german; who arrived in Astrachan with a train of five hundred men, the latter end of November. He gave out that he was to stay but a very few days and then proceed with all expedition for St Petersburg, and

and therefore required that the governor would hold a strong escort of horsemen ready to protect him and his retinue from the Kalmucks, and that the governor would grant proper passports for his couriers to be sent to the former ambassador, who was obliged, by the severity of the winter, to stop at Tamboff, a large city on the east side of the province of Veronits: The governor answered all these requests without the smallest loss of time, and being very willing to get rid of such a troublesome guest at Astrachan, he let him know that it would be almost impossible for him and his retinue to lodge in that city during the winter, because magazines of provisions were laid up only for the use of the army and garrison, and as the Kalmucks were now on the borders of Circassia, they could not supply him sufficiently with live cattle. The governor would not permit him to lodge in the city, being afraid, as they were very careless, that they might set the city in flames, and possibly they might do this designedly; as the governor was well assured by the Resident Arapoff in Persia, that the Shach was marching his great army round the south end of the Caspian Sea, through the provinces of Astrabat, Mesanderan, Bactria, Casbin and Ardebil, and that the vanguard was on the borders of the great Mogan desert, or Media, and that though the Shach gave out that he designed to pu-

nish his rebellious subjects the Lesgee Tartars, who inhabit the mountains of Caucasus, (who by the bye never acknowledge subjection to the Empire of Persia) yet it was greatly to be suspected that his principal design was upon Circassia, and the kingdom of Astrachan. This, I say, forced the governor to use all his skill to send him into Russia, where he could neither be such an effectual spy, nor influence the Tartar inhabitants of Astrachan, who were all Mahometans. The governor therefore gave him a lodging in a large suburb opposite to the admiralty, which was strongly fortified with a number of cannon ready to be discharged amongst them in case of any danger. Not contented with this, he ordered three hundred grenadiers to keep watch about him and his retinue night and day, under the command of Lieutenant-colonel Eglebright, an able, resolute officer, a Swede, who was made prisoner at the battle of Poltava. The ambassador stormed at this treatment, threatening to make his complaint to the Shach. The governor did not regard this much, but returned polite answers, telling him that the colonel had been formerly well acquainted with the Persians, and their customs; and that it was to do him honour that he had appointed a man of his rank to attend his Excellency, and provide every thing necessary for him; that the soldiers were chiefly design-
ed

ed to do him honour, and to take care that no fire, theft, or any other unforeseen mischief might happen, for which he the governor might be blamed by his own court.

These answers amused him, and were not disagreeable to his pride. He had not been in Astrachan eight days till he was taken ill of an ague ; he sent to the governor, desiring that one of the best physicians or surgeons in the city might be appointed to attend him. The governor acquainted me with this, and desired I would attend him ; but at my earnest desire, Mr Malloch, who had been formerly employed by the Persians, and knew much more about their ways than I could do, was appointed. Mr Malloch was a very sensible man, but had a considerable share of vanity, and was solicitous to become rich ; He was so far from taking this in ill part that he returned me thanks for doing him this honour. He went, and considering that violent medicines, such as emeticks might occasion such a vain ignorant man as the ambassador was, to reject all medicines, and possibly complain of him, ordered some infusion of the bark. When this was sent to the ambassador, he signified to Colonel Eglebright that he would take none of it till Mr Malloch was sent for and present. At Mr Malloch's arrival, he went to the ambassador with the colonel ; who required Malloch to take the first dose ; This surprised him,

him, who made answer that he was in good health, nor had need of any medicine, that he never took any medicines except when he was sick, and that if his Excellency did not chuse to take the medicines, there was no need of his attendance, and was going away, when he ordered to stop him, and at same time, ordered two of his men who had long poles in their hands to strike him, which they were preparing to do, when the colonel full of rage, his eyes flashing fire, laid his hand on his sword, and swore that whoever struck Mr Malloch, should instantly lose his head. He did not scruple even to upbraid the ambassador, and said that he wondered much that such a great Prince as the Shach was, sent as his ambassador a man so unpolite, and so very unmannerly as to offer to strike any officer belonging to the Empire of Russia, telling him at the same time that the greatest lords in Russia durst not presume to use men of his rank in that scandalous way. Eglebright was probably as brave a man as ever eyes beheld, and was like another Hercules: His very looks disconcerted the ambassador so much that he begged the colonel would take no further notice of it, and said that he hoped Mr Malloch and he would be good friends, adding that it was a custom in Persia, that the physician should take the first dose of any medicine he might prescribe for people of great

great rank; to which the colonel answered, that no regular bred man in Europe would ever submit to such indignity; and from this he was at no loss to know that Persia was not supplied with any persons regularly educated. Thus this affair ended, much to the satisfaction of the Governor, who never spoke of it to the ambassador, and Mr Malloch very soon cured him, but got only about the value of three pounds sterling for his trouble.

New year's day came on before we could get free of this beast. There is a custom in Russia, that the drummers and musicians belonging to the army and fleet go about in a body, to pay their respects to the great men on new year's day. The Governor ordered them to go to the ambassador's house, and Colonel Eglebright to be there. I believe there were three hundred in all, or a few more. When the drums began, it was easily observed, that the ambassador's countenance changed, and he seemed to be in very great confusion, for he knew nothing of it before they began, and, seemingly afraid, asked the colonel the meaning of it? who, smiling, told him it was their new-year's-day, and they meant only to do his Excellency honour; at which he turned calm, and, when the musick began to play, rose from his sofa, and expressed great satisfaction; but, though he kept the men long, he gave them only a trifle, which the colonel caused them to return;
then

then he talked of the number of the army about Astrachan, and their late success against the Turks? to which the colonel made pertinent answers, but magnified every thing greatly. On the twelfth day, the christening of the waters was performed after the manner in Russia, at which many Persians mounted on horseback attended upon a high ground immediately under a great bastion of the castle, upon which were mounted many very great guns. When the circular fire from the small arms began, the Persian horse were put in some confusion; but when the great cannon were fired, they were distracted, and yet, which is surprising, although there were at least forty Persians mounted, not one of them fell from their horses. From this we could learn, that these horses were not accustomed to great guns, but that the Persians were excellent horsemen. This ambassador and his retinue were watched so closely, that they could make but few discoveries here. The Tartars, and others of the Mahometan religion, were given to know, that it would be taken very ill if they went to him, unless some Russian sworn interpreter was present, and that it would be esteemed a great crime to invite any of them to their houses. At last, he resolved to march from Astrachan, and appointed a day for every thing to be got ready; but when the day came he would have again shifted: However the colonel let him

him

him know, that, as he had done so frequently before, if he did not go, the Governor was determined to send off a courier to the Russian resident, who would get orders to represent the ambassador's unreasonable behaviour since his arrival in Russia; and finally, that neither carriages nor passage would be granted till the courier returned with an answer from the Shach. Upon this representation, he presently resolved to march; and orders were given to the lieutenant-colonel to pass all the towns and cities in Astrachan, without the ambassador's being able to view them, and thus to hurry him through the kingdom of Astrachan. Indeed all sorts of men were glad at the departure of this troublesome man, especially as our markets were beginning to be very costly to the poorer house-keepers.

At this time we had no fewer than four Persian ambassadors at once in Russia, viz. one on his return in Russia, the other on his way to St Petersburg with the elephants, and the troublesome man I have said so much about. There was a fourth called Ismael Bey, who had lived in Astrachan eighteen or twenty years: He made peace with Shach Tahmas and Peter the Great, granting to Peter, Giland, and all the provinces upon the west side of the Caspian sea betwixt it and the borders of Russia; but was afraid ever to return into Persia, and therefore lived at the Russian expence, and kept a court like a great prince in Astrachan.

Astrachan. When any ambassador from Persia, in his way to Russia, halted at Astrachan, a captain's command consisting of a hundred and twenty men kept guard upon Ismael Bey, for two reasons : The first was, to let the Persians see what honour was paid him ; and the other was, to prevent the Persians from assassinating this old man. At such times, no Persian was admitted into Ismael Bey's presence, unless he gave orders to the captain. Some have been unlucky in attempting to pass the guard, without previously demanding leave from Ismael Bey ; for no soldiers are more pointed in their duty than the Russians ; and if the least force is used, the soldier, without any hesitation, will knock him down with the butt of his musquet, or run him through with his bayonet.

C H A P. LXXIV.

What happened in the Year 1741.

DURING the hard frost, we were ignorant of every thing passing in Persia ; but, as the frost seldom continues much longer than two months, that time soon elapsed, and then we were informed, that Kuli Khan had passed the great Mogan desert, through the middle of which the rivers Arras and Currun, and join their streams about sixty versts west

west from the sea : That he had made many unsuccessful attempts against these brave highlanders, and had lost many thousands of his best troops, an account of which I shall give when I treat of my travels through that country.

In the month of April, the heat began to grow very uneasy, and ushered in with it pe- techial fevers, which raged through the whole city with great fury. The Governor's children and servants were first seized, and after that his lady. By the mercy of God they all recovered, though the Princess was in the greatest danger, chiefly owing to her being delirious, and not easily managed by her servants, nor indeed by me, as I could not take the liberty to use all freedom with a lady of her distinguished family and rank in the world. At the beginning of this disease, I advised the good old Prince not to enter the rooms where the sick children lay, nor eat much animal food, nor sleep with any person with him, but to drink with acids, and every morning and evening to take a little exercise by walking upon the walls of the castle ; but above all, to take care that the non-naturals be kept perfectly regular. He followed my advice, and escaped. His lady had a dangerous relapse, from which she was recovered by a very great *diaphoresis*. Three days before this happened, she was quite delirious, when I expressed my very great concern for her safe-

ty, at which the Prince was very melancholy; but there was a necessity for my discovering that I apprehended danger, because it was so ordered by an imperial decree, that all the ceremonies, according to the Greek church, might be duly performed: But had not that been the case, I was so much cast down from the fear of her danger, that any, who knew me, might have easily known the cause; for my own mother never could have been more careful of me than she was. She had not been long sweating, when she was overtaken with a calm pleasant sleep. I then attended closely, and, after she had slept fourteen hours, she lifted up her eyes, and spoke to me quite sensibly. I then left her with her waiting-woman, and, with joy, told the Prince of my good hopes, who could not be kept from seeing her; but he staid no time, as I assured him, that, unless she had more sleep, she would probably suffer a second relapse. This being the last time that any of that illustrious family were sick during my stay in Astrachan, I shall trouble the reader no further about their diseases, but proceed.

The Princess of the Kalmucks arrived upon the banks of the Volga sooner than was expected, and passed the river with her children and the bulk of the warlike Kalmucks, before the Russians and Cossacks could arrive on the banks of the Volga, where she remained during the summer. It was believed, that
this

this Princess was advised to take this step, to prevent being forced to yield up the principality to the above-mentioned Donduck Dasse, who, she was informed, was on his journey for that purpose, and had set out from Cazan, where I shall just now leave him. Had this Princess remained on the west side of the Volga, she was afraid that the western banks of the Volga, the Don Cossacks upon the river Don, and the Circassians and Grebenske Cossacks on the south, might altogether either have forced her to quit all titles to her principality, or might have gained over many of the Kalmuck chiefs either through deceitful promises or fear; or lastly, that all these powers combined at once against her, might have cramped her principality very much, and at last, probably, force her to seek protection from the Turks, which she had already experienced in her husband's lifetime to be very uncomfortable; and therefore it was said, that she had stolen a march upon the Russian troops, and very early passed the Volga; that, in case the empire should use violent means, she might at least have the chance of a vast extended desert, where she, with her faithful Kalmucks, might take refuge, and have a probability of joining with the great nation, called Black Kalmucks, whose religion, manners, and customs, are the same with her's and the Chinese. Whatever her reasons were, I cannot positively assert,

fert, but that she passed the Volga, with thirty or forty thousand men, is certain.

The next affair that happened worth taking notice of, is the arrival of the Persian ambaffador from St Petersburg, who was obliged to winter in Russia in his way to Persia.

The governor having experienced the danger of letting these Persians lodge near the city, obliged this ambaffador to stay in an old palace, which Peter the Great had built for himself, distant about one mile from Astrachan, on a branch of the river Volga. He also commanded three hundred soldiers to encamp about the palace, under pretence of doing honour to, and protecting the embassy; but truly to spy their actions and take particular notice of the inhabitants of Astrachan who might pay him visits, which was forbidden: For by this time the Shach had marched to the north of Derbent, and we had very great reason to fear, that, whatever excuses he made, or pretences to punish his rebellious Lefgees, his real design was to fall upon Astrachan. But the Governor had more certain reasons to be afraid of this, than the inhabitants of Astrachan were acquainted with, of which he gave me the following account, when I went with him into Persia.

As the Governor had been warned by many trusty men from Buchara and Chiva, he was as much on his guard as was possible. He also not only, under divers pretences, sent

sent spies into Persia, but also into Buchara and Chiva. He, from all these instruments, learned certainly, that the Shach had scarcely reached Mezenderan, when he was informed, that the inhabitants of Chiva had unexpectedly fallen upon the Persian troops he had left to keep them under his government, and had cut them all to pieces, except a very few stragglers, who had brought these news; whereupon the Chivines lost no time in dispatching ambassadors to St Petersburg to declare this happy event for them, to warn the Russians to put no trust in the perfidious Persian promises; and lastly, to seek the protection of the empire against Kuli Khan. As these ambassadors were obliged to pass thro' Astrachan, they discovered all to the Governor, who caressed them much, and sent them carefully and expeditiously forward to St Petersburg. At the same time, the friendship he cultivated with the Chivines, was only personal, never engaging for the honour of the empire. Add to this, that many of the Georgians and Lesgee Tartars were often coming to Astrachan, giving an account of what the Shach had done, and the places of his encampment; all agreeing that he certainly designed, if nothing stopped him, to fall upon the borders of Russia, notwithstanding the great professions of amity and respect he pretended to have for the Russian empire.

About

About this time Persian coin, both gold and silver, was brought to the Tartar markets, and also into the city in great plenty. The governor having been informed of this, caused seize the Kalnucks, who brought it in; and upon examination they declared, that they had that money from Persian and Tartar spies, a number of whom were sent amongst them, and some were also in Astrachan.

With such privacy and precaution were these spies picked up, and sent to Oranburgh, and other places of security, that I, who lived in the governor's house, and daily eat at his table, never learned any thing of it, till five years after this the Prince informed me, when we were marching into Persia; and the method he took to keep every thing secret was thus.

He caused bring the prisoners, found in and about the city, into the citadel, and lodge them in a strong secure place, into which he went, attended only by his counsellors and secretaries, who were sworn not to divulge what passed there, or speak about these prisoners to any person. After due examination, and when there was a number of them together, they were chained and sent with their proper guard, out of the city in the night time to Oranburgh. He ordered also a number of soldiers, armed with pistols and broad swords hid under their garments, and

and cloathed like Russian peasants, to go, as if to traffic, amongst the Kalmueks, and pick up all suspicious persons, but strictly ordered them to observe the utmost secrecy. In this manner did this wise governor pick up the greatest number of those spies, that the Shach was quite at a loss how to proceed.

He had threatened the Turks, it is true, and at this time it was rumoured that he had actually laid siege to Kars, and other cities belonging to the Turks: But we were very well assured of the contrary: For he was encamped with his army about thirty miles north from Derbent, fighting with Usinci a Lesgee prince, and had built a large castle under the hills, which I have seen, to protect his army from the inroads of these brave highlanders; a distinct account of which I shall give when treating of these countries.

In short, the couriers dispatched by land, by the way of Kizlaar, from the Persian ambassadors to their Shach, were way-laid, seized and sent to Siberia, as were also the couriers dispatched from him to them, whose writings fell into the hands of the Governor, which effectually discovered that he intended to fall upon the kingdom of Astrachan.

At last it was found out, that the Persian couriers were lost, whereon a complaint was made to the court of St Petersburg, and also to the government of Astrachan. The Governor issued out his sham orders

ders to scour the desarts, to take better care in time coming, and to examine all suspected persons, and many innocent people at this time were seized, but suffered no manner of hurt, only a short confinement, but very good treatment otherways, purely with a design to amuse, and satisfy the Persians.

Lest the unwary soldiers employed in these secret affairs, should acquaint their companions of what they had been doing, express informations were sent to the governors, to whose care they were sent, to retain them there, and send an equal number of their soldiers to Astrachan. By this means these secret transactions never were known to the inhabitants of Astrachan: Nor could I ever have come to the knowledge of them if I had not been informed by the Prince himself five years thereafter, as I said above.

I thought it interesting to know what became of these prisoners who were sent to Oranburgh and other parts, and begged that the Prince would inform me whether they were not put to death: He assured me that they were only kept as prisoners at large, that is to say, they had liberty to go about and follow any business they could, but were not permitted to go out of the confines prescribed to them; and that all of them expressed very great satisfaction at their fortune, in being rescued from so much trouble and danger as they were daily exposed to by their tyrant, and

and that many of them had professed the Christian religion, were married, and enjoyed all the immunities which natural-born Russians enjoy.

But to return to the ambassador, who was getting ready to set out on his return from Astrachan to Persia: About the end of May, he was informed that two ships were ready to transport him and his retinue to Persia; and the Governor desired that he would make all haste to depart, as much time had already been lost, and that the vessels would sail in a few days, whether he went or not; but advertised him, that if he did not accept of that good opportunity of a free passage, he might go in what manner he pleased on his own charges; and that the court of Russia had sent orders to withdraw his daily allowance of provision, if he staid longer than the time prescribed. Accordingly the ambassador in earnest made all haste, and bought up many things which were, by the Russians, judged contraband, and also had imprudently stolen two Russian boys from poor people. The parents having acquainted the Governor of their reasons for suspecting that the Persians had stolen their children, he sent a friendly message to the ambassador, letting him know, that he could permit no contraband merchandise to be shipped off for Persia, and desiring him instantly to return such goods to the merchants, and receive back his money. He also acquainted

him, that two boys were lost, and the parents had but too good reason to suspect that some of his train had stolen them; therefore desired that they might be restored without further trouble to their parents. This civil remonstrance was neither kindly taken, nor in any part complied with; wherefore the ambassador received a second message, acquainting him, that the Governor intended to pay him a visit that afternoon, and explain matters to him. The Governor was told, that the ambassador raged at his message in a very threatening, ill-bred manner; wherefore he caused a few troops to march, and remain near the old palace, and, with a retinue of gentlemen, rowed down the river in his barge. At their first meeting, the Persian was very ill-bred and high, but a chair being placed for the Governor, after his fury was a little abated, he very calmly told him, that he was surprised that any person, who represented his sovereign, could put himself in such puerile passion about what could not be helped; that he might easily think no government would have their laws trampled upon and despised by any. He said, for I was present and heard the whole discourse, that no ambassador ever pretended to privileges which were repugnant to the well-being or laws of the empire to which he was sent; but that, when he had taken his last audience of leave to return to his native country from the late Empress, his
embassy

embassy ended ; nor could any person in their senses imagine, that he then had properly the privileges of ambassadors, though it was true that the Russians, so long as they behaved well, paid great respect to those who had been in that high station ; yet his embassy being ended, he was no ambassador. But he observed, with a determined countenance, that all these his transactions, since he came to Astrachan, would be honestly reported to the Shach ; and lastly, that he was resolved, that no provisions, nor other marks of respect or beneficence should be granted to him and his retinue, till the children were restored, and that he had already given orders to the commanders of the ships, to receive no forbidden merchandise ; and having said this, he took his leave. He had scarcely gone to the river side, when the boys were restored, and this troublesome Persian was at last obliged to give up all his merchandise. The Governor was pointed in having the infamous actions of this man so effectually represented to the Shach, that we were well assured he was strangled soon after his arrival in Persia.

C H A P.

C H A P. LXXV.

Concerning the Author's Journey to St Petersburg; what happened remarkable on the road, at St Petersburg, and till his return.

I Had now remained eighteen months in Astrachan, without having received my salary, or any other appointment. Before I left St Petersburg, I had contracted a great kindness for Miss Hadderling, whose father was superintendant over all the sloop-builders, and captain in the Russian service; her mother was daughter to Mr Edwards, captain of one of the Russian men of war, both English. Some overtures about our marriage having been agreed to, I desired greatly to go to St Petersburg, and, for excuse, represented effectually my not having been properly appointed to any command, nor having received my salary to subsist upon. My greatest difficulty was to get permission from the Governor; but, after many fruitless attempts, I at last succeeded, by promising to return to him, even if I should take my discharge from the service; to do which, I thought my right could not be opposed, though in this I was mistaken, as I afterwards experienced.

Before I enter upon my journey, I must beg to be indulged in relating what happened

ed

ed to my wife when she was an infant. Her parents had made a small fortune, and, tired of the Russian service, agreed to return to England, to live in Woolwich among their relations: In order to effect this with the greater safety, they agreed that Mrs Hadderling should go with her infant and all their valuable effects to an uncle she had, named Edwards, an eminent silk-weaver, who lived in London. She accordingly sailed from Cronstadt in a British ship, in the year 1722, with great prosperity and favourable winds, till they were opposite Yarmouth, when the ship began to fill with water; though the weather was not very stormy, nor could the pumps relieve them: In this distress, they took to the long-boat, into which they hurried Mrs Hadderling, and a humane sailor took care of the infant; but the ship sunk quickly, which obliged the sailor to toss the child into the long-boat, which was preserved by falling upon something soft. By this misfortune Mrs Hadderling lost all her effects; and, it was said, that the captain had villainously sunk the ship. Be this as it will, Mrs Hadderling next day arrived in London, and waited upon her uncle, who kept them that winter; and, as he had no children, would gladly have kept his niece, promising to give her, at his death, all the fortune he might be worth: But her father would not submit to this, and her good uncle, she is afraid, is dead, as she has heard
nothing

nothing of him since she has been married.

Having, as was said, obtained leave, and received the necessary passport, I set out in a post-boat, accompanied, by the goodness of our Governor, with a grenadier, who formerly had been frequently sent courier to St Petersburg, and knew the road very well. We proceeded about two hundred miles from Astrachan, by rowing and sailing, without meeting with any thing uncommon: At this distance it blew a strong gale from the north, so that, having both the current of the river and an exceeding bold wind to fight against, and the men being unable to do more, we drew the boat into a small creek in an island, resolving to wait till the wind was abated. The men being very much fatigued, and wet with the splashing of the water, for we had no rain, went ashore, and laid themselves down to sleep, whilst I watched, for my thoughts had banished sleep from me. In this creek we had not been long, till I spied a boat coming down the river with reefed sail. I wakened the men, who said that it was a post-boat, and that their orders were, never to pass one another, when there was a possibility of changing; wherefore they made a signal, which effectually brought the other boat to. They were convoying a Kalmuck to the Governor of Astrachan. This man seemed to be in distress, was very well dressed, had only a battle-

ax, but neither bow, arrows, nor scymitar. Understanding he could speak Russian language, I enquired if there were any news in the country, and from whence he came? Upon this he burst out in a flood of tears, but, having composed himself, gave me the following account by one of the boatmen who understood him : I am flying for my life to the protection of the Governor of Astrachan. This day has been a fatal day to my Prince, and I am afraid, that out of five thousand brave Kalmucks, I am the only one reserved to lament the loss of the much beloved, brave Prince of the Kalmucks, who, upon the most explicit assurances given him by the Court of Russia, that the Princess, wife of the late Donduk Ambo, would divest herself and her children of any pretensions they might have to reign over the Kalmucks, in his favour, marched from Cazan, where he had lived some years in a princely manner, to the place where the widow Princess kept her court, (not twenty miles distant from where we then were, on the east side of the Volga.) He, after a week's march, arrived within three or four versts of the Princess, accompanied with five thousand brave men, to her fore-post or out-guards, dreading no harm ; there he was advised to stop by them, because, they said, they had orders to permit no armed men to advance nearer the camp where she was, and begged that he would not rashly expose his men

men or them to unnecessary danger ; but at the same time told him, that they would receive any message from him to the Princess, deliver the same, and bring an answer, or that they would permit any one of his followers, unarmed, to carry a message to the Princess, and receive what answer she might be disposed to grant.

This being agreed to, the Prince withdrew his followers to a small distance, and sent one, in whom he could confide to the Princess, with instructions to inform her Highness of the great respect he entertained for her and her children ; that he hoped he never should have reason to change his sentiments ; and let her know, that he was arrived there with a few faithful friends, by the assurances the Court of Russia had given him, that her Highness would have no objections that he should take on him, which he said was his right, the government of the Kalmucks ; that her Highness's out-guards would not permit him to advance nearer till her pleasure was known, and he had withdrawn to a small distance, where he intended to wait her friendly answer.

The only answer she was pleased to return, was, that it was now late, but that next morning she would soon adjust all their affairs. He said the Prince did not relish such an answer, but was determined to wait the event.

Accordingly next morning, with the rising of the sun, the Princess appeared, mounted
on

on horseback, with about thirty thousand armed men at her back, and, without the finallest ceremony, gave orders for an attack, which, he believed, bloody on both sides : At this he cried like a child, saying, that without doubt his Prince was killed, and that he had no reason to believe that any were saved but himself, who miraculously fled, he thought, unperceived in the thick dust, to the Russian resident, who was encamped with about three hundred foldiers on a rising ground, at no great distance from the field of battle.

The resident was a captain : Whether it would have been thought prudent in him to interfere or not, I shall not take on me to determine. He never, so far as I know, was questioned for looking on as an impotent spectator : But sure he might have used all his arguments to dissuade the Princess from spilling so much innocent blood, which I never heard he had attempted.

The resident however got this man conveyed privately to the river side, where he had boats for the use of his men; from thence he dispatched him post with a packet, which he showed me, for the Governor. I requested him to eat a little of what I had, but he said he could not; however, I got him persuaded to take a glass of wine and a bit of bread, and thus we parted. I imagined that I was long enough in company, and in the neighbourhood of these barbarians : As my

men were not fatigued, after giving each of them a glass of spirits, I persuaded them to proceed, which they did with difficulty and danger. We gained their posthouse in the evening, and passed the Kalmuck's camp in the night-time, and met with nothing remarkable till we arrived at Tzaritzin.

At this city I hoped to get a travelling waggon, but no such vehicle was to be purchased. I was obliged to set out on a cart with four wheels, for which I paid a ruble and a little spirits. We were sent with dispatches to the cabinet, and therefore were obliged to make all expedition. It is true, that I had two passports, one for myself, and the other for the grenadier, in case I might happen to fall sick, or, by any unforeseen cause, be hindered from prosecuting my journey with such expedition as was required. In such a conjuncture, I would have been obliged to send off the grenadier with the dispatches, which I had no inclination to do ; because the soldier was of great use in procuring horses, and whatever I wanted. From Astrachan I arrived in Tzaritzin in six days by water, and from Tzaritzin I arrived in Moscow in nine days in my cart, without meeting with any other accident than burning four axletrees, and breaking twelve cart-wheels. Thus I was carried by water against the stream, and frequently against the wind, five hundred and
twelve

twelve versts in six days, and from Tzaritzin to Moscow one thousand and fifty one versts in nine days. I, being extremely fatigued, and all over bruised with the cart, sent my soldier to buy a waggon with proper harnesses; and, thus equipped, set out and arrived in St Petersburg in little more than three days, though I met with some hindrance on the road. I shall not mention the more remarkable towns I passed by and through at this time; because I was too much fatigued, and in too great haste to make any observations; I shall refer that till my return with my wife, and shall only take notice of two or three accidents, though trifling, which I met with betwixt Tzaritzin and St Petersburg.

At Tzaritzin I bought up as much provision as I thought would be needful for the soldier and me, till we should arrive at Chopra castle, where we might have been supplied with more. We marched, without any uncommon accident happening, till we arrived at a post-house within a mile of Michaelofka. (*N. B.* Those who go by post seldom touch at any town till they arrive at Tamboff. Posthouses are built in the desert in order that the courier may have the shortest way) where, by accident, I happened to present to the writer the soldier's passport in place of my own: At this the writer made some scruple, saying it was very uncommon

to have two passports : But as we were dispatched to the Senate he durst not offer to stop us ; because it is no less than death to stop such couriers. He however drove the cart to Chopra, but arriving there late, the writer belonging to that place had gone to bed in the town ; of which I was glad, because I might have been unnecessarily hindered all night : The writer who brought us there, made what haste he could to consult with the other writer : But I ordered in the mean time to yoke in the fresh horses and drive away. In passing between the town and castle, we met both the writers, so very expeditious had they been, who would have stopped us ; but the soldier, who was a terror amongst these people, swore that he would instantly shoot any who durst attempt to stop us, as we were travelling in the night-time, and couriers for the cabinet, and that if the post-boy deserted us, that he would fire at him and drive on himself: Thus we escaped being stopped a whole night at least, and I was afraid that if they had been examined, it might have been found irregular in the governor of Astrachan to have granted two passports in this manner ; though neither the government nor post-houses suffered by them any loss. I was afterwards however informed that the governor had done nothing irregular: But the Cossacks, whose towns these two were, having more liberty than the Russians,

fians, frequently make great work about nothing. Betwixt Chopra and Tamboff is a great defart of one hundred and eighty versts in which I had but small chance of getting any provision, and the soldier being a strong young healthy fellow who eat plentifully, we, having eat every bit of our own provisions, were reduced to the greatest necessity. In this extretremity we arrived at a posthouse in a very hot sultry day, near the middle of this defart, where we joyfully observed a kettle boiling; the people told us that they were making a soup of pork, and some barley and greens; that we should be welcome to a little of it; but, they having no other vessels to cool it in, than a trough in which they used to feed some pigs, we would be obliged to wait till it was cool enough in the pot, which was the only vessel they eat out of. (These people only stay for a fortnight or month, and are changed by others, so that they bring no furniture of any kind but what they find absoluteley necessary.) We durst make no stay; hunger is extremely pinching; the soldier made not the least hesitation to wash as clean as he could the nasty vessel, and having cooled some broth, he desired to know whether I would taste it? At any other time such a mess thus served up would have proved emetic, but at this time hunger forced me to taste it, which seeming very delicious, I eat greedily. The pork was
truly

truly good, which, with rye bread, was one of the best meals I ever made in my life, upon the strength of which we arrived at Tamboff, where we were plentifully supplied.

Farther on betwixt Tamboff and Rezen, notwithstanding all the care we had the hindermost axletree burnt, and our carriage broke down in the middle of a small desert. We had a spare axletree, but it was too large, nor had we an ax; at a distance we saw some peasants mowing hay, to whom the soldier went for an ax, but returned without success. Extremely mortified at this accident, I was going to dispatch the soldier with the express for the cabinet on foot to the next posthouse, when he, who did not chuse to part with me, made answer, that if I would buy him a broad-sword, if he happened to break his, he would soon make the axletree to answer: To this proposal I gladly agreed, and indeed very expeditiously he made the axletree fit for the carriage. After this, I never travelled without an ax. On the north side of Moscow I was necessitated to visit a relation of our governor's, who kept me to supper about two hours. As his house was a mile from the post road, the post-boy, at the next village on the right road, said, that his horses, had no refreshment at the last village and desired an hour to feed them, which was readily granted. I fell on a sleep, as did the soldier, but
when

when I looked up, the sun was high in the firmament, and the post-boy with his two horses were gone. In the village we found only one man and two horses, who agreed to carry us about six versts farther to the next post-house. If a regular complaint had been made of him who left us, he would have suffered death ; but, I thank God, my hands are hitherto free from blood.

My grenadier had hitherto behaved with undaunted courage, and though I had frequently reprov'd him for mal-treating the postmen for not making the expedition he directed, though impossible for their horses to do more, he would not absolutely desist, but, with an air of important diligence, would order them to drive on ; and, though often reprov'd, did not seldom refresh their memories with his whip. At last, to the north of Tweer, he threatened a very surly fellow, and, receiving very disagreeable returns, soon made him experience the elasticity of his whip. The driver, not relishing such discipline, leapt from the waggon, and in an instant overturned my grenadier, dexterously belabouring him, till I was truly afraid he would have killed him. With all my power, joined to that of the grenadier, I could scarcely get him disengaged from the grenadier's hair, who by this time was heartily frightened, his face being all covered with blood, and much hair torn from his head. After this my grenadier
was

was metamorphosed from a very troublesome quarrellsome fellow, to the gentleness of a lamb, nor durst he use his strength and former inclination when there was need for it. At the next village, however, though I was not displeased that the soldier had got a check, I complained to the post-overseers, and put them in mind of the danger they were in to let a crime of that kind go unpunished. I did not forget to assure the guilty man, that my doing so was with a view to save him from the gallows, of which he would have been certain, if I had complained to the cabinet. His superiors, as the grenadier, who gladly witnessed the execution, told me, punished him severely till his back was covered over with blood.

We had travelled within a few versts of Novogorod, when we spied many couriers from the cabinet, all officers; but as they were exerting all their faculties, trying who should get first, we could have no intelligence from them. We had not proceeded much farther, when we were met by one leading his horse quite fatigued, who would have pressed our horses, being a cabinet-courier; but when he understood that we were carrying messages to the cabinet, he desisted; for cabinet couriers have power to press any horses, when theirs are fatigued, and rendered unable to proceed. He however informed us, that the Grand Duchess was delivered
of

of a daughter, and those officers who had passed us were sent to the different provinces, to intimate these joyful news. After this I met with nothing remarkable until I arrived at St Petersburg, which I did with all safety on the 18th of July, and took up my lodging in a palace belonging to my benefactor and commander, Prince Golitzin.

C H A P. LXXVI.

Concerning what happened in St Petersburg.

IT is remarkable that none of my old acquaintances knew me: I was unknown even to my own brother. As I thought it reasonable to take this day to myself, I sent for him, and then, in company with him, went to Mr Hadderling's house. We found him at home in company with Brigadier Crofts, my wife's uncle, but neither of them knew me. I enquired for Mr Hadderling's daughters, and was informed that they were taking a walk, but would return about tea-time, which they did, but they also did not know me; indeed I was as brown as a Spaniard, having been constantly exposed to the weather eighteen days. Next day I went to the medicine-chancery, at the regular hours, and was immediately introduced to the archiator, who happened to be there with my worthy

friend Dr Miniatty, of whom I made mention formerly. The archiator expressed some surprise and resentment at my arrival, without having asked leave from the chancery; but when I had satisfied him that I had hitherto never been appointed by the admiralty, nor had received my salary since I left Taverhoff, and produced my passport from the Prince, with a letter for him, he was satisfied, and assured me, that he had sent four memorials to the admiralty to enforce my settlement and salary, and that I should carry the fifth next day. I returned him my respectful thanks, but begged that he would either grant my discharge, or increase my salary five crowns more *per* month, as Mr Malloch had received the same; and as I was intrusted with the affairs which he had been intrusted with, that I would presently petition the chancery for that purpose. The archiator answered, that I had not served long, and that such an advancement of salary was granted only to old servants. I insisted however, that I had done my duty, and now, as I was born free, I would either have what was but reasonable, or my discharge. Dr Miniatty, who had been silent all this time, said many obliging things in my favour, and desired to speak with the archiator privately. The result was, that he ordered me to prepare a petition for the advancement of my salary, which he had determined to grant, but discharged me to mention any

any thing about my discharge. Before I left the chancery, I got my petition ready, and delivered it into the archiator's hand.

Next morning I attended the chancery, and received my dispatches according to my desire for the admiralty. At this time, being well able to speak, read, and write the Russian language, I had no need of an interpreter, and, afraid of falling into the base Secretary Neleuboff's hand, I, though I had no acquaintance with him, went resolutely to Admiral Golovine, a professed friend to the British upon all occasions, and president of the admiralty. The grandees do not keep people long in waiting, as is done in more civilized nations. I was immediately admitted, and, after I had told him all my grievances, I offered to put into his hands the memorials from the chancery ; but he said that I ought to carry them to the admiralty, and present them myself to the board, with a petition acquainting them, that I had been near nineteen months kept from duty by the admiralty's not having duly answered the memorials from the medicine-chancery, and craving that the board would do me justice, and dispatch me for Astrachan with all convenient speed. I did so, and next morning attended the board when the president was there, and produced my memorials and petition, which occasioned a very great commotion among the writers. Neleuboff was sent for, and instantly

ly put under arrest, as was his conciliarist. This last is a person whose business it is to keep all the writers belonging to the department in good order, and also to get all dispatches ready, according to orders he receives from the secretary ; but sometimes, as in the present case, they confound all regularity, and when detected, seldom escape deserved punishment.

The secretary, by some subterfuge, had the good fortune to get free with a threatening reprimand ; but the poor conciliarist was condemned to die. I was told that application was made to the most merciful regent the Grand Dukes to save his life, and appoint him to run the gauntlet, which he could but have performed awkwardly enough, as he had formerly lost a leg. This punishment he had the good fortune to escape, by the Princess Elisabeth's mounting her father's throne a few days before he ought to have suffered.

I lost no time, as has been related, to put my affairs on a good footing ; but there I let them remain a while. As I had some desire to stay, after so long absence, amongst my friends ; and, as I had nothing to do but attend the admiralty once every day, only to let them see I was in the way of my duty and ready, I had the more time to make my observations. Besides European ambassadors, one from China, one from Constantinople, and two from Persia, resided at once in St Petersburg,

terfburgh, and many from fmaller Afiatick principalities. The Chinefe ambaffador was much efteemed for his moderation and good quiet behaviour. The Turkifh was insolent, as was his numerous retinue, beyond all defcription. Some of his followers, having tranfgreffed the bounds of all difcretion, not fatisfied with affronting people on the ftreets, through which they frequently ufed to ride, purely for mischief, at laft entered into the inhabitants houfes by force, and attempted to abufe both married and unmarried women. Complaints having been fent from the miniftry to the ambaffador, were unanswered and difregarded : At laft a memorial was put into his hands acquainting him of the many former representations which had been fent to him, representing the mifconduct of his followers, without any regard having been paid to them ; that this was the laft they intended to fend, in which the miniftry demanded, that the Turks fhould only be allowed to walk, unarmed, into the city ; and that their number never fhould exceed two or three at a time ; that the centinels had orders to put a flop to a greater number ; and laftly, that an exprefs was fent to the Sublime Porte to juftify fuch conduct. This memorial, inftead of reftaining, rather inflamed them ; for foon after they received it, five Turks fuperbly drefled, mounted upon their beft horfes, dared to ride up to the bridge, where

where a serjeant's command did duty, which they attempted to pass, though the soldier upon watch gave them a sign to retire. The foremost of the Turks, at one blow, cut off an arm of the soldier with his scymitar. The serjeant at the head of the soldiers brought the Turk to the ground with his halbert, and killed another outright, then ordered the soldiers to present; but the three remaining Turks had no inclination to continue longer. It was said that the Turk who fell from his horse was in great danger of his life. Threatening complaints were sent to the Grand Chancellor Count Osterman, who, I doubt not, answered them properly; but in place (as was demanded by the ambassador) of punishing the serjeant, he was immediately advanced, for his gallant behaviour, to the rank of an ensign, because he had exactly obeyed the orders given him.

I there saw the public entry of the Persian ambassador, and the presents, with the elephants I formerly had seen at Astrachan, which was superb enough. The ambassador, with some of his principal attendants, was carried to court in coaches belonging to the Emperor. Soon after that, many Persians advanced with Chinese boxes, in which, it was said, were contained valuable curiosities natural and artificial, and some jewels of all kinds. What the value of these presents might be, I never was informed. After they were

were gone, the elephants were conducted, every one directed by a man sitting behind his ears, with a small ax in his hand, such as I described formerly. The unruly elephant was very troublesome, for I was witness to his flying into a fit of passion, that required all the art and power of his keeper to command him. I happened to be standing with the learned and reverend Mr Lerna, our minister, within the glacis of the admiralty, when the beast, unprovoked, reared his trunk high, made a noise, and directed his steps towards us. We very soon retreated, but if his rider had not been able to manage him, he might have undoubtedly killed some hundreds of people. These great beasts were covered with very rich silks, brocades, and cloth of gold, some of them reached near the ground. They gave out that King Solomon's tent covered one of them. It was of silk, very large, antient, and certainly the worse of the wearing; but I scarcely believe it was Solomon's. This however was esteemed a precious present.

After I left St Petersburg, in the reign of the Empress Elisabeth, in the winter season, I was informed, that the courtiers caused two of the largest elephants to be brought before the winter palace, with a design to make them fight; for which purpose a large dyke of snow was made cross the great area before the palace. They brought an elephant on each side of
this

this dyke, opposite the one to the other, spoke to them, encouraged, and provoked them as much as they could, but all to no purpose. They seemed to rejoice to meet, and played with their long teeth as oxen are wont to do with their horns, but never offered the smallest violence. The soldiers had at last orders to throw squibs and small fire-works among their feet. The elephant is extremely afraid of all kinds of fire-works : It was therefore thought, that this would have the effect of causing them fight ; but in this they were also mistaken. It had indeed the effect of frightening them excessively ; and they ran with their directors differently; the one ran under a large arch, and there killed his governor, by squeezing him betwixt the arch and his back ; the other ran up the principal street, and in his fright seized a German baker, tossed him high up in the air, and when the unfortunate man fell down upon the street, the elephant at once pressed him with his foot to a mash.

I saw yet remaining betwixt the palace and the admiralty part of the ice-house, which the late Empress Anne had caused build with a view to ridicule one of the most antient and respectable families in Russia, by causing marry one of that family disordered in mind, to a woman troubled with the same infirmity. Few great personages have ever appeared in the world, who have not one time or other discovered

discovered some weakness, which could scarcely have been suspected, till detected. The Empress Anne was said to have been a sensible, humane, judicious lady, but she could not check her childish levities; and it is not easy to imagine what was her policy or pleasure in this improper display of her power. The walls were of ice; the bedstead, and all pieces of household furniture were made of ice; they fired out of ice cannons: But for what? to do honour, or, which is the truth, to ridicule the Russ nobility in the person of a poor foolish pair, taken from the best family in Russia. The same sum of money, which was expended upon this dream, might have made many honest good families in Russia very happy. I could not help thinking, that it looked as if heaven had designed to let us see, what a poor end the greatest earthly grandeur frequently comes to; for no sooner was this farce of mock magnificence ended, than that great Empress was taken ill and died; and although the succeeding summer was extremely hot, yet part of the walls of that ice-house stood, to expose the last action of the great Empress Anne, till the month of August, as it were to let people, living at the distance of thousands of miles, have time to witness the last whim of one of the greatest personages upon earth, to have been only fit to amuse children.

In the month of August we had daily news of the Swedes designing to attempt the destruction of the royal navy at Cronstadt. One day in the admiralty, I happened to speak with an Englishman, who had been very long in the service, and was employed at Revel. He was expressly sent for to go to Cronstadt, to sink some vessels to prevent any access by the Swedes near the harbour. He said that he had effectually done his duty, and that the board had given him the rank of captain of foot; but observed, that if they had advanced his salary, and given him a small pecuniary consideration, it would have been more agreeable to him. This man was brought into Russia by the father of his country, the Great Peter: he was said to be a very eminent mechanic, and understood sea-affairs extremely well, and altho' he was grown old in the service, he was but at that time titled a captain, without any increase of his salary for that work I mentioned: No less than the safety of Cronstadt depended upon it, though there was not found one belonging to the navy that the board of admiralty could trust with it; and the only impediment to make a figure in the navy was owing to an excessive modesty, and a considerable share of wisdom, useful to others, but not to himself.

The great General Keith arrived in St Petersburg this season. I would gladly give a character of this great man, but finding myself

myself very unequal to such a performance, let it therefore suffice to say, if ever any man was possessed with wisdom, true bravery, and greatness of soul, he was the person. His actions, during the course of his long service in Russia, demonstrate this to be true. He kept excellent discipline in his army, yet the soldiers called and esteemed him their father. He never was vain-glorious, no high language did he ever utter; every expression was modest: But the word of command was resolution itself. The soldiers adored him, nor were they ever in the least afraid of any number of enemies, when he commanded them. He was always successful, and though he was wounded, yet he never was conquered. It would employ larger volumes than mine to give some regular account of this great man. I shall therefore only observe, that he commanded an army of 40,000 regular troops in the Ukraine, when the late Empress Anna Joannovna died; and when he received the orders to swear, and also to cause his army swear fealty to the Duke of Courland, he would not do it. He had no objection to the Emperor John's being heir; but he judged very prudently, that the Duke of Courland, being constituted regent, never could be agreeable to the Grand Duchess, nor the Prince; wherefore, he persuaded the army under his command to remain as they were, till the royal family's pleasure should be known;

known ; and for that very purpose dispatched a major, in whom he could put trust, with an account of his resolution, and advised the major to get into St Petersburg, by unfrequented ways, dressed as a peasant, and apply to the Grand Duchess, or her royal husband, personally. This was successfully effected ; but the Duke of Courland was arrested, and sent to Shiffelburgh that night he arrived : However, the Grand Duchess was well pleased to see that she had a general in chief, with so respectable a number of troops, who had nobly disdained to take oaths for the Duke of Courland, and only waited her Highness's orders, to rescue her from all danger. This great general was in St Petersburg at my arrival, designed to command the army under his great friend Count Lacy, who ever entertained so high an opinion of his military genius, that he never attempted any thing of moment without his approbation and concurrence. The Swedes infatuated, declared war, at a time when any single man might have foreseen their danger. The army of Russia was then not only numerous, but flushed with the many victories and conquests they had gained over the Turks, and commanded by their victorious generals, whom they really adored.

C H A P. LXXVII.

Declaration of War against Sweden.

THE Swedes were forward enough to declare war on the 28th of July, and the Russians on the 24th of August following. The declaration was read in the British chapel immediately after service, before any of the auditory were permitted to retire, and on Monday the army began to cross the Neva in their way to Wilmanstrand, where General Wrangle lay strongly encamped with a body of 14,000 men. An accident happened in the night preceding the action, which might have discouraged less resolute troops than the Russians. The Russians, at no great distance from the enemy, encamped on a rising ground, almost surrounded with bogs. Orders were given to keep a sharp look-out during the night-time, and that if any thing was observed to stir in the bogs, a signal was to be given by the discharge of a musket. The night was very dark, and a thick fog had spread over all that country. Near morning a horse had strayed into the bogs, and a centinel hearing some noise from thence, fired (as he was commanded) his piece; when instantly the whole army was under arms. The regiment next to that centinel,

centinel, mistaking, in the fog, their friends for enemies, fired upon them, which was immediately returned, and many brave men were killed and wounded on both sides, before it was possible to discover their error : However, this had no other bad effect upon the bravest troops in the world, than the loss, which was too great, of these few men.

The army marched straight to the enemy, whom they found strongly intrenched, with Wilmanstrand on their right, and a very well fortified camp on their left. The Russians attacked them with the greatest conduct and resolution imaginable. The Swedes, equally resolute, defended themselves with great bravery from two o'clock, P. M. till nine at night, when the shattered remains of their army surrendered themselves prisoners of war. An ill advised accident happened at the end of this action. The town of Wilmanstrand displayed their white flag, and offered to deliver it up to the Russians. The field-marshal ordered a few of his best troops to take possession of the gates : Before they had marched half way, the Swedes upon the walls fired upon them, which exasperated them to such a degree, that a terrible carnage ensued.

During the heat of the battle, as I was credibly informed, Major-general Uxkull ordered a Scots gentleman (Captain Fullerton) to march with his company, to force a redoubt.

doubt : Mr Fullerton, now Lieutenant General, had not marched far before he lost the half of his men. At this instant General Keith, who was every where, passing by, asked who that was? and ordered him back to his former station. Mr Fullerton assured the General that he had only obeyed the orders of his Major General. Keith sent off one of his adjutants in quest of the Major General, who was found far from danger : But Mr Keith, who could not relish so very absurd an order, told Mr Uxkull of his error, and also of his keeping far from danger. He then ordered him to remain in such a place from whence he could have a distinct view of his division, and send his orders without loss of time. It was told me that these orders were scarcely given, till Uxkull was killed with a cannon ball, as it were to go hence and answer for the blood of so many brave men foolishly spilt.

All the ammunition, cannon, small arms, grenadoes, tents, &c. belonging to the Swedish army fell into the hands of the Russians ; the fort of Willmanstrand was razed to the ground, and upwards of two thousand prisoners were dispatched into Russia, besides three thousand wounded soldiers. The brave General Wrangle was wounded and sent with the rest of the Swedish officers to St Petersburg, and used with great humanity. He begged, and obtained his desire,
that

that he might be kept near Count Lacy, his conqueror. The Count gave him lodgings in his house, and frequently through the day visited him, and although Mr Wrangle was near eighty years of age, he was very soon recovered.

This old General had been formerly a prisoner in Russia, in Peter the Great's time, and had been obliged, before he could obtain liberty, to return home, to engage never to serve against the Russians upon pain of death, and such an engagement he had signed. He no sooner was recovered, than the Empress Elizabeth, who then reigned, sent to congratulate him on his recovery, and expressed her desire to see him at Court. He accordingly went and paid his respects to her Majesty, but still he had some diffidence that the Russian government might call him to an account for having served against them at this time; and therefore thought proper to hint as much to that most merciful Sovereign. She called him father, and expressed no small surprise that he could entertain a thought that the Russians were so barbarous; assuring him of all liberty either to stay there, or retire to Sweden, upon his parole given not to serve during this present war. But she expressed no small surprise that he, in so advanced an age, could be prevailed upon, or indeed was able, to endure the fatigues of war. To which he only answered

swered that he thought it his duty to serve his country, nor never could decline it, so long as he was able, unless prevented by his parole of honour; though at the same time he acknowledged, that even giving his parole not to serve longer against the Empire of Russia could not be disagreeable to him, because he had, since his arrival in St Peterburgh, experienced so much humanity and politeness, that he much doubted if any nation in Europe could equal it: For, said the old man, to surpass it is impossible; and he did not scruple to declare that even the Swedes could not blame him for such sentiments. He farther declared that he, from principle purely, never would fight against her Imperial Majesty's interest, but would be glad of all opportunities to fight against her enemies, provided only that Sweden was excepted. Upon which he obtained his liberty, and the Swedish officers were permitted to walk through the streets of St Peterburgh, and dine at any gentlemen's houses, who were also recommended by the Court to use them with all manner of hospitality.

C H A P. LXXVIII.

Concerning what happened to the Author, and the cruel Crasna Schoke.

THE battle of Wilmanstrand was fought upon the third of September. An order from the Medicine's Chancery was brought to my lodgings on the fifth, early in the morning, commanding my immediate attendance. When I entered the Chancery, the secretary desired me to make all haste to go for Wilmanstrand; because, said he, the number of wounded is so great that it is not possible for the surgeons, and others to visit them once in one day, and, telling me, that a memorial was making out for the Admiralty to acquaint them with this resolution. This was a blow I very little expected. I expostulated with them as much as I was able. I put them in mind of my contract, by which they might learn that I never intended to serve in the army: Then I desired them to reflect upon my having been near twenty months without pay, one farthing of which I had not as yet received: Lastly, I desired them to consider what the Board of Admiralty and others would think of them, when they daily sent to them such wavering unsettled memorials. To this an old sly translator, a German, named Waring, said that the

the Archiator designed, as soon as a vacancy should happen, to advance me in the army, and had promised me out of the Chancery two months pay as a present. By this time I had got a little more courage, and calm reason was taking its place: I frankly answered, that from the very beginning of my services I was told, and indeed gave credit to it, that the Archiator designed to advance me; that I hoped this would have taken place long before the time of my contract was expired: But that all these fine promises had hitherto taken no other effect, than to make me quite diffident. That, as I was in possession of attestations from all my commanders concerning my good services, and from the Medicine's Chancery concerning my qualifications; and finally as the time of my engagement in the service was expired; I was determined to take my dismissal from it. To these reasonable remonstrances, I was told that such language was seldom heard in Russia, and that if I would not go voluntarily, there was no difficulty to send me with a party of dragoons. Though I made answer, that if they sent me with dragoons, neither they nor the dragoons could cause me do what I would not; yet the dragoons ran so much in my fancy all day, that I dreamed of them at night. Finding they could not get me to agree, they advised me to go to the Archiator,

tor. I did so, and our discourse ended much in the same way as above, only with this remarkable difference, that the Archiator in great rage declared that I should be sent that very night.

I now for the first time, since I arrived in Russia, began to be alarmed, and I could find none to support me, however just my cause was, but the British Ambassador. I lost, therefore, no time in representing my grievances to him, though altogether a stranger. The honourable Mr Finch our ambassador, who was greatly caressed at court, ordered me to return to the chancery, and let them know from him, that if they broke through the agreement of our contract, or that if they sent me by an act of arbitrary power to any place, contrary to their sense of my agreement with them, he would espouse my cause, and have justice done me; and that he had ordered me to call daily at his house to acquaint his secretary with their proceedings against me: And lastly, if they sent me away, he would apply to the Grand Dukes, and get me brought back very soon, and would not fail to get them punished for their perfidy and tyranny. I made no manner of hesitation to report the ambassador's message, at which they seemed not a little disturbed. Whilst I was in the chancery, the Archiator arrived; and I, not knowing what would be my fate, depended upon Mr Finch's promise,

mise, and, as I was desired, sat in the room waiting the issue; for at this time all the doors where the Archiator and his counsellors were consulting, were not only shut, but centinels placed at them, so that it was impossible to over-hear one word. After about half an hour's waiting, I was summoned to attend. I doubted not that they would threaten much, and endeavour by such ways to prevail with me to submit, though I was firmly resolved to stand it out to the last extremity. But how much was I surpris'd to hear the Archiator speak to me with more complaisance than ever he did before, and put into my hands at the same time a memorial to the admiralty, acquainting them that the sub-surgeons and learners whom I had formerly required, agreeable to the regulations for the port at Astrachan, were dispatched; therefore desiring the admiralty to grant their salaries and dispatches without loss of time. He at this time never spoke one word about the army or dragooning, but parted with me very respectfully: The truth is, I had been informed, and experienced it to be true, that the honourable Mr Finch was remarkably distinguished at that court, and that every college or office in St Petersburg was afraid of him; for he always spoke out, and whatever he represented was well taken, and answered according to his desire. As I was walking home, Dr Smith, an Irish gentleman,

man, physician to the guards, met me, and said that the Archiater had said to him that I was extremely obstinate, &c. This gentleman, I dare say, wished me very well, and spoke the real sentiments of his mind. At the finishing of his discourse, he desired me to remember I was not in Great Britain, and wished I would smell the ground. My answer was short, viz. that I had considered every thing, and that though I had not been so long in Russia as he, I had smelled and measured twice as much Russian ground as he had, at least: That I had taken my measures, and was determined never to submit to do any thing, but what by my contract I had pointedly agreed to. This affair thus ended, and I never was troubled more about it.

The war was carried on with vigour on the Russians side. Gen. Keith forced a very strong out-post belonging to the Swedes, not without an equal loss of men: But a barbarous affair happened at this time, which would have tarnished the glory of the Russian army, if it had been carried on by any of the regulars. A Cossack, called Crasna Schoke, or Red Cheeks, was bred in Peter the Great's army, and, for his bravery upon all occasions, was, by that Great Sovereign, created major-general of the irregular Cossacks. This Crasna Schoke was a perfect savage, nor was even Peter the Great able to restrain his cruel disposition, neither by

by threats nor punishments. He was indeed strong, indefatigable, and took very little rest. Before the war was declared, he arrived in St Petersburg with 4000 horsemen under his command. He one day was admitted into the presence of the Grand Duchess, who was pleased to say, that she was sorry for all the horse, but particularly the irregulars, because no magazines had been erected for them. Crasna Schoke, without any hesitation, made answer, That if her Highness would only lose no time in declaring war, he would ask no manner of forage for his horses; but till that was done, he could not provide for them, and a very short delay would render them quite useless for war: He said, that had Peter the Great followed his advice, there would have been no war at present; for, said he, I advised the Great Emperor to cut off women and children: Now, said he, these very infants, then sucking their mothers breasts, and many born since, are the people who form their army at present: Upon this declaration, the Great Duchess let him know, that she and the whole ministry hated cruelty of all kinds; that she esteemed Peter the Great for his humanity, as much at least, as for all his other great qualifications joined together. She used the force of all her rhetoric to dissuade him from cruelty, and ended her discourse by assuring him that he never could expect any esteem or regard from her, if he
used

used the enemy cruelly, but averred that she looked upon all such as the common enemies of mankind. Then, this generous and compassionate Princess intreated the Field-marshal and General Keith carefully to observe Crasna Schoke's actions, and to restrain his native fierceness and barbarity. However despotic a regular general may exercise his great power over the irregulars in the Russian army, a prudent man finds himself obliged to use sound policy, and take all the gentle ways possible to gain his end; wherefore these two great generals contented themselves to dissuade Crasna Schoke to refrain from his former barbarous actions, and caressed him much above what either his rank, or any other qualifications had a title to.

The battle of Wilmanstrand was scarcely ended, when Crasna Schoke and his men were amissing. The generals had no doubt of his being set out upon some of his irregular expeditions, but could not conceive what it might be. At last, after three or four days absence, he appeared loaded with spoil, and many thousand heads of cattle. A few days after that, a major was dispatched from Count Lewenhaupt with expresses for Field-marshal Lacy, giving a particular account of the many hamlets and villages burnt to the ground, and every soul put to death, who unfortunately fell into the hands of that barbarian

barbarian Crasna Schoke, and possibly this major was charged with some other affairs. The Field-marshal, agreeable to his natural politeness, received the major, treated him, and entertained him as a gentleman, and lastly parted with him, after having been an hour in secret discourse, openly conferring upon him some marks of distinction: Whether Crasna Schoke suspected that complaints had been made to the Field-marshal or not, I never could learn; but the next morning he went off with only a handful of men, to reconnoitre the enemies situation; he passed some miles on a narrow way, situated betwixt mountains and an impassable morass, till he was at last stopped by a breast-work, mounted with cannon, which he did not relish; he therefore returned back the way he came, for there was no other; but had not retreated far till he was stopped by another breast-work, which the enemy had thrown up whilst he was marching to the farthest off one: He was there attacked briskly, nor could he escape; he would not deliver himself and men up prisoners: At last however he rode into the morass, but not far, till his horse was drowned, and himself shot; too good a death for such a man! The Swedes certainly had way-laid him, for they knew him well, and not satisfied with having shot him, it was said, they cut the dead

body all to pieces. Such was the end of this monster of the human kind.

But this affair did not altogether end thus, for a body of the guards was at this time in the army, and a few of them were upon duty at the Field-marshal's tents, when the Swedish major had a conference with his Excellency. They, having observed the polite behaviour of the Field-marshal to the major, tho' an enemy, were prepossessed with a foolish notion that the Field-marshal was designed to deliver the Russian army into the hands of Count Lewenhaupt; and, without great difficulty, brought the rest of the guards into their way of thinking; who suddenly took to arms, without so much as one officer, threatening to extirpate all the foreigners in the army: The Field-marshal committed their reduction to the care of General Keith, who, being their lieutenant-colonel, mounted immediately, after having given private orders to his adjutants, and rode calmly up to them, made inquiry into the cause of their grievances, put them in mind that they never could attempt any thing of themselves, and assured them that the result would end in their destruction. He then advised them to put themselves under his command, who was their lieutenant-colonel, and he would answer for it, that they should have speedy justice done them. They agreed to this and declared their satisfaction to be com-
manded

manded by the ever-victorious General Keith. He then commanded them to draw up and go through their exercise ; at last, he ordered them to ground their pieces, and march off the ground : At this instant, a regiment of Cuirassiers rode up, surrounded and disarmed them. They were instantly shackled and sent to St Petersburg in carts ; and thence dispersed in small numbers in garrisons through the whole Empire, with strict orders to punish them with great severity for every small crime which they might be guilty of. Twenty or thirty of those mad-men were sent to Astrachan ; but the Princess Elizabeth had mounted the throne before this happened ; an account of which memorable affair I shall give, as I had it from good authority, though I acknowledge it is not agreeable to any other account hitherto given of it.

END OF VOLUME FIRST;

...by the ever-victorious General Keith.
He then commanded them to draw up and
go through their exercise; at last, he order-
ed them to ground their pieces, and march
off the ground: At this instant, a regiment
of Grenadiers rode up, surrounded and dis-
armed them. They were instantly disar-
med and sent to St Peterburgh in carts:
and thence dispersed in small numbers in
positions through the whole Empire, with
strict orders to punish them with great seve-

**** Some few Errors have escaped into this First Vo-
lume, the Author residing at a Distance from the Press,
but these shall be carefully corrected by Errata at the End
of the Second.**

...Elizabeth had moved the throne
...this happened: an account of which
...I shall give, as I had it
...though I acknowledge
...to any other account
...given of it.











